



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



9.19

Phil 8593.2.5

Met. Relig.  
Philos. of Relig.



With W<sup>m</sup> Carpenters Respect,



**THE SOUL,**  
**HER SORROWS AND HER ASPIRATIONS.**

**LONDON :**  
**GEORGE WOODFALL AND SON,**  
**ANGEL COURT, SKINNER STREET.**

# THE SOUL,

## HER SORROWS AND HER ASPIRATIONS :

AN ESSAY TOWARDS

THE NATURAL HISTORY OF THE SOUL, AS THE  
TRUE BASIS OF THEOLOGY.

BY

FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN,

FORMERLY FELLOW  
OF BALLIOL COLLEGE, OXFORD.

“ He that believeth hath the witness in himself.”—1 John v. 18.

“ We too believe, and therefore speak.”—2 Cor. iv. 13.

LONDON:  
JOHN CHAPMAN, 142, STRAND.

---

MDCCCXLIX.



Phil 8593.2.5

1850-1851  
1852-1853

# CONTENTS.

---

PART	PAGE
I. SENSE OF THE INFINITE WITHOUT US . . . . .	1
II. SENSE OF SIN . . . . .	57
III. SENSE OF PERSONAL RELATION TO GOD . . . . .	90
IV. SPIRITUAL PROGRESS . . . . .	132
V. HOPES CONCERNING FUTURE LIFE . . . . .	180
VI. PROSPECTS OF CHRISTIANITY . . . . .	197



## PREFACE.

---

I HAVE been at a loss for a title to this Essay, which, while short enough, would fairly warn the reader of its character. I at first entitled it, an Essay on the Positive Foundations of Practical Religion; and afterwards, On the *Directness* of Knowledge in Things Spiritual: but gradually found that it was necessary to go into such details concerning the Pathology of the spiritual organ, that I might possibly seem to have entrapped the reader into a more experimental discussion than he could have calculated on. My present title, I think, gives fair warning to those who dislike such books; and at the same time sufficiently well explains the end in view.

By the Soul we understand that side of human nature upon which we are in contact with the Infinite, and with God, the Infinite Personality: in the Soul therefore alone is it possible to know God; and the correctness of our knowledge must depend eminently on the healthy, active and fully developed condition of our organ. While the well-being of

Man is the chief reason for coveting a knowledge of God, and all sound theology must aim ultimately at a practical end, the *direct* object of this Essay is nevertheless more scientific than practical. A Natural History of the Soul demands some notice of its diseased as well as its healthy state, and of its growth from infancy towards maturity. How this is a basis for Theology will appear of itself.

The analogy and contrast between Moral and Spiritual knowledge deserves remark. A long period passed in the history of mankind, during which Morals were regarded as something essentially Dogmatic, and indeed to a considerable extent Arbitrary and varying with political institutions. The Morality of every great national system was long supposed to depend entirely on the external authority which promulgated it: only in the later stages of mental culture is it clearly discerned, that Ethics, as a science, is as unchangeable as the ethical nature of man. Thenceforward the idea that there can be any thing arbitrary in morals faded away; and the authoritative sanction which is superadded to moral precepts became valued, not as that which is essential to guarantee their truth to a cultivated moral nature, but as that which (like parental command) enforces action while the moral sense is in its infancy. And this was perhaps the very feeling of the great

apostle Paul towards the law of Moses. He venerated its precepts, as a mature man those of his aged schoolmaster; whose rod he no longer dreads, though he sees it to be wholesome that he once dreaded it: but after Faith was come, he was no longer under the Schoolmaster. That in spiritual things each worshipper sees by a light within him, and is directly dependent on God, not on his fellow men, is an axiom pervading the thought of every New-Testament writer.

In Morals, it is something to gain external right conduct, even if there be as yet no internal love of goodness or insight into its nature; hence the Dogmatic principle derives there a real practical value, which is developed in LAW. It is important to keep people from mutual violence, even by an armed police or by arguments addressed to selfishness: and such constraint of the conduct by fear or by other lower motives, is a part of necessary training. It is a highly valuable result, if a man avoid falsehood and impurity, though he may know no better reason than his father's or his priest's command. But there not only is no spiritual *object* in his worshipping God solely because a father or a priest commands it, but the very statement is intrinsically absurd. That is not worship at all, which is rendered in obedience to mere dictation; for worship is a

state of the Affections, and these are not under the controul of the Will. A man who desires to worship, but has little heart for it, can only say to God, "Draw me, and I will follow after Thee;" and he must needs have some heart in him, to say as much as this. At the suggestion or order of another we may present our bodies in a church or at a confessional, (which, if done without insight, is *a moral, not a spiritual, obedience,*) but it is essentially impossible to worship God spiritually unless we are drawn and led by forces internal to the Soul itself. The coming of the Spirit into a system of LAW, is that which essentially converts it into GOSPEL. It is useful to have spiritual teachers; and if they be wise, it is wise to listen reverently to them: but their lessons have not been successful, until the learner has gained an eye for seeing the truth; and believes no longer because of his teacher's word, but because *he has an Anointing from the Holy One, and knoweth all things.* And this is the sole object of spiritual, as distinguished from moral, teaching,—*to minister the Spirit*; to impart spiritual eyesight, and spiritual forces. Those truths, and those only, are properly to be called Spiritual, the nature of which admits of their being directly discerned in the Soul, just as Moral truths in the Moral Sense: and *he* is a spiritual man, not

who believes these at second hand, (which is a historical or dead faith,) but who sees internally, and knows directly. To guide towards the method of ascertaining these, is the object of the present treatise: and whatever may at first seem to be digressive, is nevertheless intended to conduce to a greater fulness of insight into this cardinal point.

The *first* Part treats of the Infancy of the Soul, under that rudimentary Religion, which we may possess without conscious reflection on self;—that in which we contemplate the great external realities of Faith, as if we had no personal relations towards them. It ends with the establishment of Reverence towards a Personal Deity, when Morals and Religion at length coalesce. The *second* Part concerns the spiritual phenomena called out by the sense that we ought to be what we are not, in the presence of God. It ought (if it were scientifically complete) to include all the dreadful results of Remorse and capricious or gloomy Asceticism; but I shrank from the odious task as needless, and have depicted only a few strongly marked, but not fanatical experiences, issuing in happy results. The *third* Part exhibits the soul struggling after a sense of its Personal Relation to God, with the happy and remarkable results of its success, and its means of recovering this sense, when lost. The *fourth* treats of the Ideal of spi-



ritual excellence, and of the Aids from without towards attaining it. The *fifth* discusses the grounds on which the soul forms Hopes and Aspirations concerning a future life; and the *sixth* closes with reflections on the state and prospects of practical Christianity.

If these pages shall save any persons from that desolating Pantheism which is abroad, and show those who know not on what to rest their faith, to what quarter they must look for solid ground; and still more, if I shall have stimulated independent thought in men of holy feeling and devout practice, and shall have made them meditate solemnly on the insufficiency of our present Theology to evangelize any portion of the professedly unbelieving world;—I perhaps ought to regard this as recompensing me for the very serious moral effort, which it has cost me to publish this book.

---

NOTE ON PAGE 67.

In accounting for the previous want of peace, that has been omitted which may have been the most important circumstance; namely, that the person previously tried to *palliate* his offences. This would deserve to be enlarged upon.

---

ERRATUM.

Page 54, line 7, *for an eternal read* and eternal.

# THE SOUL:

## HER SORROWS AND HER ASPIRATIONS.

---

### PART I.

#### SENSE OF THE INFINITE WITHOUT US.

##### INTRODUCTION.

ALL human knowledge, like human power, is bounded ; and it is then most accurate, when we can sharply draw the line which shows where ignorance begins. In actual life, our region of sensible light, where the common understanding guides us, is always encircled with a dimmer belt, beyond which are glimpses of partial light, and then, infinite darkness ; but, though we do not pass suddenly from positive knowledge to absolute ignorance, we are, in every direction, distinctly aware of both states. To different minds, moreover, the sphere through which the understanding ranges, varies exceedingly ; and many adults, especially in savage nations, remain all their lives like children.

It is thus a condition of human existence, to be surrounded with but moderately diffused light, that instructs the understanding, and illimitable haziness, that excites the imagination : and this being

B

our natural and necessary case, the question suggests itself, whether the obscurity, as well as the light, is adapted to call forth any sentiments within us, or in any way tend to the perfection of our nature. And, happily, the reply to this question immediately suggests itself, upon referring to the case of children. How lovely in a child is that modesty, which springs from an unaffected consciousness of ignorance; especially when joined with a belief that others know. When new knowledge puffs up, and amiable diffidence is lost, all feel that a bad exchange has been made. If so, we attain one fixed point. We perceive that the region of dimness is not wholly without relations towards our moral state. There is a proper effect which it ought to produce upon us, and which deserves to be more closely analyzed.

The case of the child will still farther aid our examination. Reverence towards parental judgments not only is approved as salutary, in order to gain the advantage of a wiser guidance; but in itself, especially in the earlier years of childhood, commends itself to all as a beautiful and excellent state of feeling. A very young child has no measure whatever of a parent's wisdom: it is to him unbounded. He neither knows, nor expects ever to know, the limits of it; and, therefore, his reverence is capable of being absolute. A whole world of sentiment is wrapt up in the relations felt and acted upon by such a child; sentiment, which none are brutish enough to fail to appreciate. Not all

the knowledge, nor all the wisdom, nor all the prudence and self-control, nor all the manly independence, which a child of five years old could, under human limitations, attain, would compare in value to the loving reverence, sure trust, and unreflecting joy which such a child may exercise towards a parent, whose wisdom and goodness appear to him illimitable.

Are then these exercises of heart a source of happiness and of moral perfection in infancy, and are they *not* desirable for the adult? Or are they desirable, yet not possible, for those, whose understandings have opened wide enough to see that all human minds are limited, all human hearts shallow, and that no object worthy of absolute reverence comes within the reach of sense? Certainly it is no artificial dogma, invented by priests or needing enforcement by princes, that the man who has reverence for nothing has a hard, dry, and barren soul. In the English tongue, indeed, the very word *Soul* appears to have been intended to express that side of our nature, by which we are in contact with the Infinite. The soul is to things spiritual, what the conscience is to things moral; each is the seat of feeling, *and thereby the organ of specific information to us*, respecting its own subject. If all human Souls and Consciences felt absolutely alike, we should fitly regard their enunciations as having a certainty on a par with the perceptions of Sense: only, as sense is developed in an earlier stage of humanity, and is less dependent on higher

cultivation than the Conscience and the Soul, the decisions of Sense are undoubtedly far easier to ascertain—not therefore more certain when ascertained.

In the child and in the savage, as the Conscience is but half developed, so is it manifestly with the Soul. The former is built up out of certain rudimentary sympathies and perceptions, co-operating with an experience of human tendencies, under the stimulus of which the moral powers expand, until moral Truth is at length discerned by direct vision. The Natural History of the Soul is far less simple, as must be expected of a higher organ: its diseases also are more hidden and more embarrassing, and in consequence its pathology will assume an apparently disproportionate part of a true theology. For if Theology is “a science of God,” it cannot omit to treat of the bright or sullied state of the mirror, in which alone God’s face is to be seen. How to keep it ever bright, is the problem for every practical Christian; to unfold the practical rules in connexion with an extended knowledge of the entire man, so as to reconcile Passion, Prudence, Duty, Free Thought, and Reverence, is perhaps the highest form that the problem can assume to the Theologian.

In order to see the whole from its commencement, it is well to begin from the study of the elementary phenomena out of which are evolved the ideas of something boundless beyond us—of Supernatural Power—of Divine Existence—and finally of

One Infinite God ; and, in passing, the collateral degraded types of each new sentiment or judgment will be remarked upon.

### 1. AWE.

The child of a good and wise parent, before attaining an age when it can meditate on the parent's finite powers, is certain to learn that there is One higher still, worshipped by him with prayer and praise. This is at first, and for some time, mere hearsay, destitute of any religious power on the heart, until a higher idea of infinity is attained. The gloom of night (*deadly night*, as Homer terms it), more universally perhaps than any other phenomenon, first awakens an uneasy sense of vastness. A young child accustomed to survey the narrow limits of a lighted apartment, wakes in the night and is frightened at the dim vacancy. No nurse's tales about spectres are needed to make the darkness awful. Nor is it from fear of any human or material enemy : it is the negation, the unknown, the unlimited, which excites and alarms ; and sometimes the more, if mingled with glimpses of light.

A moral feeling blends with the sense of the awful unknown and infinite, when Death comes before a child's mind, especially if it fall upon one known and loved ; and at a more adult age its effect is proportionably increased. Whither is our beloved one gone ? Does he exist ? Can he hear us ? What a world of possibilities are presented to the imagination ! Tender hope suggests that the

spirit of the deceased still hovers about us, still watches us, still loves to know that we remember him. Yet what sharpness of thought can pierce this veil and *prove* that any of these things are true? There may be a brighter scene beyond the grave, at least for those who are so kind or brave as our lost one; or it may be that while his shade flits about in air, it is nothing to him; it is but a delusive ghost, in which he is not at all.—Such are probably the alternatives which present themselves to the untutored mind: a misty and infinite region of possible existence is opened to it; and as often as evil conscience goads a man, he becomes less brave in the contemplation of death.

Among places and circumstances, perhaps the darkness of *Groves* may be made prominent, as conducive to religious awe. The very name of a grove in Latin (*lucus*) is implicated with religion. The grove of the Eumenides was to an Athenian the most awe-striking of places. To the ancient Germans, groves were the proper temples of the gods. Among the Hebrews likewise, as with their Canaanite neighbours, the tendency to worship in groves was enough to overpower positive commands to make offerings in Jerusalem only. Nor will any one wonder at this, who knows what it is to walk alone by night under thick trees. A good conscience, and a heart not unused to pious communings, is only enough to repel painful tremors, except in those whom habit has deadened; and even these—though brave and stout men—unless fortified by

intelligent devoutness, are liable to sudden panic. We must repeat, it is not bodily enemies that they dread; but a sense of the infinite, the unseen, the unknown—pierces through and perhaps unmans them.

So much having been obtained as a foundation, Awe, if it cannot be and ought not to be annihilated, ought to take some moral form. But even in this early stage numberless deviations take place, and mark especially the rudest Paganism. We may embrace them under the general name of Fetishism, which here claims attention.

In its simplest form, Fetishism ascribes divine virtue to some common object; to a stone, a beast, a tree, or a scrap of writing. Any of these may be made a god, an amulet or talisman; or may vary from the one character to the other. The worshipper dares not use his common sense, which would reject these absurdities; because his soul is sufficiently awakened to suggest that there is an occult power in nature transcending his reasoning faculties. He has gratuitously, indeed, attached the power to a definite object; but he is not trained to observe *within what limits* he is to follow his understanding, and *where* it is salutary to trust his imagination and faith to go beyond it; hence the fear of offending something divine paralyzes his powers. Natural phenomena probably in many cases commence such delusions. The falling of a meteoric stone is a highly exciting event. Such a stone, in an ignorant people, is certain to be revered,



perhaps worshipped ; and then is likely so to break down the objections of common sense, as to increase the predisposition to similar prostrations of soul. To break off a bit of the fetish as a talisman, might seem too daring ; but to adopt for such a purpose a piece of stone similar in appearance to it, would be an easy progress. If one man has a talisman, others wish for it, and a premium is offered for the manufacture of charms. While a nation is in this state of ignorance, some or other event is almost certain to commence such superstition ; and any commencement suffices to ensure a continuation. Among the savages of Africa, of Asia, of America, the form of the result varies, but the spirit and the spiritual consequences are the same. The incipient cravings of the soul are in a certain way satisfied, but so as to arrest their farther development. To the unknown and the infinite, no moral element, nor in fact even any personality has been ascribed. Nay, it has been reduced into a finite sensible shape. One fragment of Deity has been as it were embalmed for awe ; but it has no life nor life-giving power.

In the same stage a gross and hard-drawn picture of an after-life is often adopted with firm belief. An unseen world is imagined, probably underground, where the nations of the departed reside ; and in this Tartarus different souls have a better or worse lot. So far there is little amiss ; but next enters the idea, that men on earth can in some way affect the state of the dead. The simplest and most

amiable form of the thought is, that offerings of meat and drink, of flowers and wine, at the grave of the deceased, allay his appetites and soothe his feelings. Out of this grows an *art* of propitiating the dead, perhaps also of consulting them; and a class of men arises who profess skill in this art; they are the primitive priests or necromancers. As their credit takes root and their science unfolds itself, they are at length supposed to have power over the departed. Their favour is purchased by costly gifts, and the warriors alternately tremble before them or trample them down.

With the advance of cultivation, when the idea of a world of spirits has become familiar, Fetishism in many cases rises out of its primitive sottishness into a belief in spirits of magic. Arab superstition is in this respect a step higher than African. The *genii* of the Arabians appear at one moment as acted upon by spells or talismans, at another as the unseen powers, in fact spirits, who animate them. Here the human mind has proceeded to add personality to the occult influences, but has not been able to disentangle the supernatural persons from the sacred object or fetish, and has systematized moreover the belief in a science which gives to man a control over these powers. To the *genii* in general no preeminency of moral character is ascribed. Nevertheless, so soon as personality is allowed them, it inevitably follows to conceive of some as better and some worse; hence the doctrine of *good* and *evil* *genii*; out of which in due time is certain to

grow the Persian idea of two great spirits, good and bad, and ultimately that of Monotheism, if general cultivation proceeds.

But even in the midst of enlightened science and highly literate ages, errors fundamentally identical with those of Fetichism may and do exist, and with the very same results. As the savage adores the darkness without seeking or longing for light, so the cultivated man, sometimes by a morbid sense, dreads the light lest it should interfere with the gloom which he thinks necessary to religious awe. Not satisfied to take God's world as it is, he makes as it were an artificial darkness in order that he may be more religious ; as if there were danger lest the human mind should exhaust the mysteries of the universe, and leave no room for wonder and reverence. Of course it is not meant that the individual is conscious of this ; yet bystanders may see that there is in him a positive dread of clear notions, a suspicion that one who knows what his own words and professions mean cannot be reverential, a tendency to confound enigmas with mysteries, and to inculcate (under new names) a belief in charms and magic. A wafer blessed and water sprinkled by a priest, are often invested over the breadth of Europe with magical virtue ; and the words of a creed, reverentially recited by one who does not profess to understand them, are believed to have power in heaven and hell. A "purgatory" of fire is imagined, where souls have their guilt burnt out of them in long time, unless indeed the mass-chant-

ing priest give to these unfortunates an earlier release. On his unction and absolution the state of dying men depends; for he keeps the keys of the courts above—we know not why or how, but because God has willed it. The priest may be both ignorant and wicked, yet he holds these celestial powers by virtue of his office, and his office by a magical investment derived from a man perhaps neither better nor wiser than he. The ordained and consecrated are all *fetish*: it is irreverent to pry closely into their pretensions.—In proportion as such fantasies prevail, religious development is stunted. To abandon the common understanding becomes a necessary virtue; after which, moral enormities may be incorporated with the system without revolting the worshipper. If the whole religion were of this kind, it would be as debasing as any possible Fetishism; and such things now stand their ground only because they are generally combined with purer and holier principles; the influence of which for good imparts undue credit to these besetting superstitions.

## 2. WONDER.

But if such errors are escaped, the pure and reasonable result of Awe upon the soul, is a pervading and active sense that we are as motes in the sun-beam, lost in immensity; insects of an hour, enveloped with mystery, knowing neither whence we came nor whither we go. And this feeling of Awe is soon blended and softened, by the feeling of the

Sublime and the Wonderful mixing with it. Of all natural objects the starry heavens probably impart the most vivid conception of boundlessness, and the fullest feeling of sublimity, while the night itself, in which they are seen, aids their impression on the soul. Some, however, live in mountainous countries, or within view of the sea, and have, even in the day-time, magnificent objects in sight. Here it is natural to expect that the sentiment of the sublime would be more effectually cultivated; but it is not always so. Far more depends on the susceptibility of the soul, than on the scene habitually presented to us; and perhaps a stranger is more powerfully affected by the majesty of sea and mountain, than those who see them habitually.

Nevertheless, it cannot be doubted that the ideas of the Sublime and of the Wonderful, however excited, rise in more or less energy in all human bosoms long before we attain adult age, and are characteristic of the species. A man without these ideas would be as great a monster as a man without love or power of laughter; such a one, if in human form, would deserve to be judged an idiot. And herein lies the fundamental union of Poetry and Religion. Hence is it that the ancient Bard, Vates, or Prophet, united the characters of poet and religious teacher; and in fact to feed upon the higher and sublime poetry is virtually an exercise of the soul—a preparation at least for actual religion. Its similarity to religious meditation is in many respects evident. As the same hymn of praise and

love may be daily recited and wearies not; as no new information for the understanding is coveted; so the same lines of the poet eternally delight—the more perhaps because they are old. We dwell upon each word, and find the imagination more and more stimulated; it is a never-ending feast; for the wise poet does not limit his hearers to his own mind, but leaves room for them to range beyond him if they can.

There is indeed an elementary religion, a certain religiosity, implied in the perception and enjoyment of the Sublime. The soul, awakened to a sense of the boundlessness of the universe, of its own essential littleness and inferiority, combines an aspiration after fuller knowledge with a devotional self-prostration in the presence of that *power, principle, or person*, out of which we and all that we see has proceeded. Perhaps in this stage no definite judgment is formed, whether the power be, or be not, a conscious designing mind, or whether one or many; in fact, all these hypotheses may be embraced alternately with the changes of feeling, while (through the absence of self-inspection) the person is unaware of it. There is also an elementary religion in speculations about an after-life, so long as they proceed from the feelings of the soul, and not from metaphysics or inventive fancy. To explore that dim abyss with wondering thoughtfulness, though no conclusion be reached, is a profitable exercise of soul, which enlivens the conscience, and rectifies our views of earthly interests,

*Moral* reverence in all this is not yet formed, yet the Wonder is reverential. Curiosity is not forbidden, but is sobered; inquiry is encouraged, if it be in an earnest and grave spirit; but in conjunction with these, there is the humility of conscious ignorance and littleness, and astonishment at powers to which no limit is seen. Such is the second stage of healthy development.

But of this likewise we find numerous degraded types, in which the rising religion is marred. Curiosity having once obtained leave to pry into things and powers which surpass the understanding, becomes sportive, and luxuriates in fanciful invention, wholly unmoral, and into company with which nothing can force the conscience. Of this we have eminent instances in the gods of Greece, and in the fairies of the German and Persian tribes. To indulge in mere *play* with the ideas of things infinite, appears to be more fatal to religion than any other corruption. It can hardly be esteemed an alleviation of the evil, that the form moulded by wild fancy soon gets some hereditary sanction, and a fixed aspect, after which it is believed as a veritable likeness; for the more intense the belief of notions which destroy all reverence for the unknown and supernatural, the more fatal the result. So long as a man is giving loose to such fancy, he is depraving his own religious faculties by egregious trifling; and a nation eminent for the tendency, can have depth neither in its religion nor in its conscience, which are forcibly kept apart. Perhaps it may be

thought severe to pass this judgment on the Ionian tribes of Greece; yet even if the result was checked by other causes, there is still too much truth in the remark to be withheld. In the same way, the writing and reading of fairy tales, in prose or verse, if I do not mistake, exerts whatever influence it has in the direction of deadening the religious sense\*. Those who people the vague, unseen, and infinite world with beings not much superior to us, and in a moral aspect often inferior; who become as it were familiar with these creations of their fancy; not only can feel no reverence to *them*, but, just in proportion as they realize the ideas, incapacitate themselves for any reverence at all. Puerile wonder remains as the deepest sentiment possible to them. A man may, no doubt, read the *Midsummer Night's Dream*, and get no harm from its fairy personages; for the simple reason that they touch only the outside of his nature, excite no deep interest, and are altogether frigid, if beautiful. But if the tale stirred him up deeply—if it seized firmly on his imagination—and, much more, if it were actually believed, it would proportionably exhaust the sources of real devoutness. Under the same head will be included the grotesque devil-stories, and other legends of the Middle Ages. It has often been

\* Of course supernatural imagery may be a *vehicle* for pure and impressive sentiment; nay, may be of a grave and impressive character itself, as in Mr. Robert Landon's recent tale, called "The Fountain of Arethusa." I speak solely of such inventions as cannot be forced into contact with the conscience.



remarked how emphatically degrading must be the religion of an Italian, who whips the image of his saint when he has failed to obtain a request. But this is only a particular instance of the general proposition, that familiarity is antagonistic to devotional awe, and that we cannot make the world of spirits a place of amusement to the superficial fancy, without impairing our susceptibility to its sober and profound influences.

The old religions, which sinned on this side, sometimes had a counterweight in the fantastic melancholy of other fictions. The sympathy of the Greek with Ceres for the disappearance of her daughter, and with Niobe for the slaughter of her beautiful children, was perhaps rather tender than reverential; but the awe inspired by the Eumenides was true and deep; and, in the opinion of Müller, the belief connected with the infernal gods was the only purifying part of the Greek religion. No earthly enchanter could deliver the guilty soul by celebrating mass. Yet the dreadful alternative of gross superstition is this, that the graver view tends to cruel and horrible rites, while the fanciful and sportive sucks out the life-blood of devout feeling.

Between these two extremes—which were the besetting sins of Carthage and Gaul on the one hand, of Greece on the other—the Romans and the Egyptians appear to have held a wiser mean. Both the latter nations had the principle of reverence so deep, that they were susceptible of grovelling super-

stition even when their cultivation was considerably advanced. Egypt is regarded as the native land of secret doctrines or mysteries; and such things seem to have been highly congenial to the Romans. The credulity of both appears to us astonishing; yet dark and bloody rites were foreign to them, and at the same time they were far removed from puerile familiarity with their deities. Nevertheless, each nation fell at last into another, equally fatal, corruption; into the worship of a hard hereditary ceremonial, unprompted by feeling, unrenewed by fresh inspiration. Thus the infinite became degraded into the finite, the divine into the petty or the bestial. The death of a cat, or the drinking of a chicken, were made of prime religious importance; and though no gossiping poets dissolved their piety into lascivious dreams, the Hierophant and the Pontifex congealed it into grotesque shapes, immovable and lifeless as stone.

### 3. ADMIRATION.

The human mind opens in some degree to a perception of Beauty, as early as to that of Awe; but Awe, as a sentiment, reaches its beneficial limit in a stage of low cultivation. The sense of Wonder also exists in much intensity, at a time when that of Beauty is little developed. Indeed this last advances but slowly towards perfection, and always perhaps falls short of it. Herein we see, that Beauty, though it exists in limited dimensions only, and

seldom can inspire Awe—for Respect, Admiration, Rapture, rather than Reverence, Awe, Devoutness, express our feelings toward beauty, of whatever kind—still, Beauty has one element of infinity; what is more, it is received by a single grasp of the soul, by an intuition which cannot be analyzed; and as we contemplate its higher specimens, we can feed upon them untiringly, finding no end of admiration and delight.

In those great scenes of the visible world, the sublimity of which impresses us, we also generally discern much beauty. In the starry heavens, indeed, there is sameness; yet the eye only, and not the mind, gets weary in gazing on them. The tranquillity of their beauty never becomes insipid, though there is so little variety. Very different is the sunlit landscape; in which the characters of beauty are too numerous to be counted, no one spot giving a view like the rest, nor one day like another. Yet here also, in that which changes least, as the falling of a cascade or the rolling of the sea, there is no satiety of admiration. How close to devout exercises of soul is this feeding of the heart on beauty, the epithets and metaphors of every language testify. We need therefore to examine the relation which it bears to religion.

As Awe is softened into Reverential Wonder, when the understanding is sufficiently enlightened to save us from vain and degrading fears, so the latter sentiment warms into Admiration, when we discern the Beauty which invests the infinite world. As a

glimpse of life beyond the grave, and a glance of the eye into the depths of space, are adapted to calm stormy passions, so a tranquil resting of the soul, on whatever form of beauty, tends to impart cheerfulness, elasticity of spirits, and mute thankfulness, towards—perhaps we know not *whom*. The child who gazes on the colours of the sunset, on the light which ripples with the water, or on the deep blue of the sky, is often ready to bound with speechless and unanalyzed delight. Nor need adults any higher beauty to call forth the same feelings, though the magnificent scenery of some favoured spots is appreciated by them with still keener zest. Thus, in short, to call forth the heart into admiration, *and prepare it for love*, is the appropriate function of all natural beauty.

How far the beauty of the human countenance can here be included, is a question which may move debate. The living face of man is undoubtedly an infinite depth, inasmuch as it depicts character; but this concerns expression only, and is therefore but partially dependent on mere feature and primitive form. It must indeed be admitted, that meek and majestic features, a pure soul shining through the eye, a self-collected spirit seen in the general harmony of the countenance and in the absence of everything spasmodic, exert a strong *moral* action on the spectator; and, in so far as religion consists in a quickening of the conscience under a sense that a superior intelligence is gazing upon us, the sight of a human face—even sculptured or painted—may be

called a religious influence. Such is that of a mother to her infant. But this influence is not that of beauty, though it is heightened by beauty. We must disentangle the two things. A countenance of great purity and love *must* have a certain sweetness of its own, but not dependent on feature: on the other hand, the most beautiful features that ever were, may be insipid and inexpressive, as those of many Venuses and Madonnas. Such beauty does not even draw admiration from the cultivated; and when it does in any, the limit is soon reached; satiety succeeds; the matter has thus no place in our present discussion. But, as in the few instances in which it is our privilege to see a living face beam with the highest moral qualities of man, the mere sight is kindling to every good and holy emotion, so pictures or statues, which skilfully represent such countenances, are themselves, (up to a certain limit not easily reached,) a moral and spiritual power.

It is not from these that idolatrous mischiefs are to be feared; no populace ever became degraded by gazing upon them. The many representations of the countenance of the Man of Sorrows, on which the eyes of the Middle Ages were fed, varying no doubt greatly in merit, were yet on the whole highly conducive to spiritual improvement. On the contrary, the stupid and debasing idolatry was found in connexion with some staring large doll, tricked out in tawdry finery and called a Virgin—such as still infests Continental cathedrals—or with some daub of a picture, neither having nor supposed

to have artistic excellence. Such things were made fetish, and the worship of them was attended with nearly the same influences as the worship of a stone fallen from Jupiter. They had not even elevating reminiscences; for no one fact was imagined concerning the Virgin which tended to quicken the conscience\*.

But though the painted or sculptured countenance is, under certain circumstances, a spiritual power, yet, as being a work of art, it in all cases puts us beneath the artificer, and may even keep us down to his level. This was strikingly illustrated in Greek sculpture. A statue of exquisite beauty, representing some hero, or an Apollo, *because* of its beauty seemed to the Greeks a fit object of worship. We still have before us many of the finest performances of their sculptors. We know distinctly enough what an Apollo, what a Mercury was; and we can accurately appreciate the influence of such worship. None of the qualities of mind which we peculiarly call spiritual, were expressed at all. Meekness, thankfulness, love, contentment, compassion, humility, patience, resignation, disinterestedness, purity, aspiration, devoutness; little of all these was felt or understood by the sculptor; and how then *could* he communicate them? Those

\* The preposterous ascription of perpetual virginity to a married woman, tends to promote, not true purity, but fantastic error in elder people, impure curiosity in younger ones. The abuse of the word *chastity* to mean *celibacy* is bad enough; but this is so much worse, that I fear to express my feelings about it.

who adored his work could not rise to a higher adoration : such is the danger besetting those who allow themselves to cultivate devout feeling by aid of human art. We must not indeed disdain that occasional stimulus ; but much less must we habitually have recourse to it, or make ourselves dependent on it.

The same remark, I believe, will apply to church architecture. That the canopy of heaven elevates and sobers the heart, preparing it for devotion, if devout in itself,—few will deny. It needs not much susceptibility farther to confess, that a lofty cathedral, when suitably constructed, has an effect similar in kind to this ; and that, other things being equal, it is better adapted for prayer, (though not for preaching,) than a well-lighted room, with low and flat roof. It is then evidently our wisdom to use such an advantage, when it offers itself. But on the other hand, since nearly all depends on the judgment of the architect ; since many fail utterly, and produce only clumsy piles of masonry more or less ambitious, or gorgeous palaces more or less tawdry, but in no way appealing to the religious sense ; it will only degrade our worship, if we force our hearts into sympathy with their false conceits, and invest their influence with a *quasi*-religious sanction. It is deplorable to hear how the form of a mullion or of a capital, the adorning of a pulpit or communion table, to say nothing of other finery or fancies, is elevated into religious importance, with reference to churches which all the ornaments and

all the architectural lore in Europe can never invest with religious beauty; which are either as thoroughly *industrial*, in their primitive conception, as any square meeting-house, or are built on some hereditary pattern with no moulding idea. Mediocrity—as in poetry, so in church-architecture—must utterly fail to *elevate* the soul; patch the work as much as we will. Considering how rare access to churches of the noblest kind must always be, tenets of religion which dwell much on such a help to devotion, are likely to gravitate into mere fetish superstition.

An opposite danger is often remarked to accompany the use of *all* the fine arts as handmaids to religion; namely, that the would-be worshipper is so absorbed in mere beauty, as never to rise into devotion. Music, Painting, Architecture, are by him appreciated as such; and if *criticized* as such, then farewell to their religious influence. That the danger is real and imminent, the history of Italy and of modern Rome proves. What Romanist will claim for Rome a high place in his religious world? and yet where else have these influences acted on so great a scale, for so long a time? On the whole therefore, we must assign an exceedingly subordinate place in religion to *that* beauty which the hand of man produces. Its author is not divine enough; it is dangerous to make much of his work. Only when it is so glorious as to rise above criticism, can it lift us higher than our common level.

The worship of beauty in days of chivalry was



in some sense more elevating; that is, oftentimes no visible thing was worshipped, but a mere ideal of the mind. When a Spanish knight devoted himself to promote the honour of the Virgin, or even if a human mistress was his idol, yet as he perhaps had never had more than a transient glimpse of her countenance, his own imagination was the chief source whence her beauties were drawn, and this imagination was stimulated by whatever other female beauty met his eye. If we measure religion by its efficacy upon the conscience, this knightly religion was very feeble indeed; yet, as supplying a principle of action which rose out of an ideal, it was not without analogy to religion, and perhaps was as good as the worship of Apollo.

Far better is the modern enthusiasm for romantic scenery and all the beauty of nature; for that is a real infinity and constantly mingles itself with the awful and sublime. He who has a keen sensibility for this beauty, is not forthwith to be called a religious man; yet he has a temperament on which true religion may be happily superinduced, with more substance and grandeur of devotion than is to be found, where *only* the moral sentiments are in any active life.

---

But here we reach a point at which it is suitable to review the connexion of these primitive affections of the soul—Awe, Wonder, and Admiration—with its moral state. As regulating our social conduct, Mo-

ality embraces both Self and Not Self; and in every possible developement it recognises both Interest and Duty as leading ends of action. When they do not clash, the virtue which pursues Interest is called *Prudence*; when they do clash, then to pursue Interest is stigmatized as *Selfishness*. But the essential difficulty of the moralist is, that he has no command of the impulsive forces of man, such as to help each of us in sacrificing Interest at the shrine of Duty; hence the mere moralist, in a sort of despair of generous virtue, is tempted to recommend self-sacrifice on selfish grounds; and the moral system, which began with the profession of exalting Duty, ends with an idolizing of Self. Thus few men indeed are ever made more moral (in any but a *prudential* sense) by treatises on morality.

Is there then in human nature no direct antagonist to Self? Undoubtedly there is. The first aid against it is gained from Domestic Affection. To gross and barbarian natures, love for Woman, not uninspired by some perception of beauty or grace, is probably the first school of practical virtue: so too do all the domestic relations tend to the same result—the sacrifice of self to another. He who lives without any such ties, ἀφρήτωρ, ἀνέστιος, is shorn of a great aid towards the mortification of self; and unless he cultivates a peculiarly enlarged benevolence, falls morally below the average of his class and country.

Nevertheless, the Domestic Affections rather *multiply* Self than annihilate selfishness, and often re-

c

produce it in a less odious but more intense form. They are quite insufficient to the general demands of Morality. But another and still more inveterate antagonist to Self is found in Enthusiasm ; which is generally a passionate love for some idea or abstract conception : and whatever form it may take, its impulse is capable of animating the man to any or every sacrifice of Self. But not to speak of separate enthusiasms, one universal enthusiasm belongs to man as man ; namely, that which is called out by a sense of the Infinite, wherein we feel Self to be swallowed up. All the *generous* side of human nature is nurtured and expanded by the contemplation of the Infinite. Hence is it, that a sense of the Sublime and Beautiful, though it be not yet Religion, supplies to Morals an important part of that, which it is reserved for Religion to give in full power and divine harmony. Hence the glorious effect of high poetry, and of all that excites pure and beautiful imagination, on the youthful mind. Therefore is it, that to weep with Andromache, to shudder for Hector, to tremble at Achilles, to admire Alcestis, to rejoice with Admetus, constitute a better moral training than Paley's Philosophy or Aristotle's Ethics can give. Whatever throws the heart out of Self and swallows it up into some noble or beautiful Idea, affords to the moralist precisely that which he wants, but cannot get within his own science. He may, as it were, build an elegant Engine, but he has to look elsewhere for Heat and Moving Power. Enthusiasm is the Life to Morality ; and to excite

a pure and reasonable Enthusiasm is, as will be seen, the great moral end of Religion.

#### 4. SENSE OF ORDER.

But to return from this digression.—Quite differing in kind, though now and then coinciding with the sense of Beauty, is that of Order. The same stars, which strike the eye of the savage as so beautiful, impress the diligent observer still more powerfully as the type of all Order, Unchangeableness, and thereby of Eternity. With the cultivation of the intellect and of scientific astronomy, immense additional weight accrues to this view. The recurrence of the seasons, as of day and night, presents itself to the mind as the most fixed and indubitable certainty in the universe. It suggests, ere long, that other departments of the world follow laws of equal fixedness, even if less known to us. The winds and the waves, long before their subjection to law is proved, are assumed to act really under similar limitations. Thus the supremacy of Order over the universe is recognised.

Accordingly, *κόσμος* (Order) was the name for the Universe introduced among the Greeks after the birth of philosophy, and exceedingly modified the wild conceptions suggested by the then current mythology. If the powers or principles by which Nature is as it were animated, have personal consciousness and design, yet at least they have nothing approaching to caprice and fickleness. Be

that which we call Deity, mind, be it feeling or be it life, at any rate unchangeableness is its most striking attribute. The recognition of this fact is the turning point and passage from barbarian, or puerile, to cultivated or manly religion. After this step has been made, the religion cannot possibly remain what it was. It may lose in simplicity and depth, or it may even gain as to both: it may recede or it may advance; but to stand still is impossible.

The first great change which the perception of Universal Order brings about is the abolition of Polytheism. Where many gods are a national belief, all of these are thenceforth regarded as separated by an immense chasm from One who is Supreme;—that is, if the notion of their distinct personality is retained at all. He is farther discerned to stand in the *same* relation towards *all* nations of men and all worlds; His principles of action to be the same in every age; and now also, perhaps for the first time, a distinct conception of His *Eternity* comes in. Whatever of moral character be in other respects ascribed to Him, constancy *must* be ascribed: henceforth therefore contemplations and imaginations concerning the Infinite put on the coherent form of Thought and Speculation. A man's religion ceases to be a result of unreflective emotion: it has become self-conscious. Thus also it has fallen, more or less, under the control of his understanding, and he is a moral agent in regard to it, which he was not during his

time of barbarism : and with his more adult condition, he has assumed new powers and encounters new dangers. A new element has been admitted, which will either dilute and as it were dissolve all the rest, or by blending with them happily will give to the religion definiteness of form, consistency, and notions which can abide the criticism of acute incredulity. As before, we stop to consider the degraded types incident to this stage of development.

Whatever is habitual to us, is ill adapted to rouse attention or excite Wonder. No one wonders that a rock remains at rest ; and though, as long as we know no other cause of motion than muscular force, the movement of the sun and stars does seem wonderful, yet their regularity certainly abates largely from the feeling. After it has appeared that a magnet will cause steel-filings to move towards it ; much more, after we are convinced that stones fall to the ground, and planets move round the sun, for the same reason as steel-filings are drawn to the magnet, the mind is forced to confess that Motion has nothing in it more wonderful than Rest. Everything appears either to remain as it is or to change, by a *Law*. But the conscious voluntary action of mind in us is not by Law ; nay, just in so far as Law operates, we lose free agency ;—as, where we have fallen under the dominion of Habit. This suggests the theory, that Mind is not in the universe at large, since it is not wanted to account for Motion. If in this stage of thought a man have adopted a

moral theory which denies that in the human mind any originating Will exists, and which resolves Will into other forces of which we are not conscious ; then *à fortiori* such a man naturally becomes an Atheist ; for, discerning no first principle of movement even within himself, he of course needs none out of himself. If in his own actions he sees no marks of (what others call) Will, why should he see them in the actions of Nature ?

When Atheism depends on the Moral \* error of believing that man's Will is nothing but Desire, and is never self-moving, it is to the Moralist that we must appeal for correction. It is enough here to say, that the question of Theism is not one of speculative acuteness : Atheists in fact are generally acute men, and on their own ground it would be wrong to dogmatize against them. But Atheism grounded on false morality is peculiarly shocking ; as it seems to imply that not the spiritual only, but also the moral faculties are deficient. To the case of such a man no argument is available, whatever his logical powers.

But if the atheistic tendency arise solely from the impression (*produced by the uniformity of Law*)

\* I do not know how to avoid calling this a *moral* error ; but I must carefully guard against seeming to overlook that it may be still a merely speculative error, which ought not to separate our hearts from any man. If we see another to love goodness and shudder at evil, he is to be loved, although he may hold a theory, which we think logically tends to annihilate exertion *for* the good and *against* the evil. On the other hand, many a bad-hearted man is theoretically orthodox on these points.

that there is no Will active in the universe, this objection appears to be suitably met by the argument for Design, to which I next proceed.

### 5. SENSE OF DESIGN.

In barbarian religion the idea of a personality in the Powers of Nature slips in and out; establishes itself generally in the popular creed of more advanced nations with considerable constancy, but does not know how to justify itself on reasonable grounds; and very often, at the first touch of philosophy crumbles into ashes, leaving only Atheism or Pantheism. The question now arises—Is this ascription of Personality to the universal Power so gratuitous as those philosophers thought? Does the universe exhibit to us much Order indeed, but no marks of Mind?

Here, if anywhere, we must guard against the fallacy, which pretends that a clue to truth is worthless, if it have not the form of cogent Argument. We discern *Design* in the world: *Fitnesses* are the clue by which we track it out; yet they undoubtedly do not always, and much less in every detail, indicate Design. Fruit is palatable and wholesome to man: a suitability might strike me, between an orange or pine-apple and my appetite; but it would not be sound forthwith to infer that *this particular* fruit had been designed for me *as a particular person*—either by man or by God. Farther examination often shows antagonist fitnesses: two mouths



want the same loaf, and it cannot have been intended for both. The antagonisms are often of a less obvious kind, yet serve equally well to correct the first rash conclusion. So again, fantastical minds may carry up the detail of human arts into the divine purposes; as the well-known engineer, who before a Parliamentary Committee expressed his opinion, that "large rivers were intended to feed navigable canals." It must be admitted, that the argument from Fitness to Design may be ill applied: but the question arises—can it never be trusted?

A lung bears a certain relation to the air, a gill to the water, the eye to light, the mind to truth, human hearts to one another: is it gratuitous and puerile to say, that these relations imply design? There is no undue specification here, no antagonist argument, no intrusion of human artifice: we take the things fresh from nature. In saying that lungs *were intended* to breathe, and eyes to see, we imply an argument from Fitness to Design, which carries conviction to the overwhelming majority of cultivated as well as uncultivated minds. Yet, in calling it an argument, we may seem to appeal to the logical faculty; and this would be an error. No syllogism is pretended, that *proves* a lung to have been made to breathe; but *we see it* by what some call Common Sense, and some Intuition. If such a fact stood alone in the universe, and no other existences spoke of Design, it would probably remain a mere enigma to us; but when the whole

human world is pervaded by similar instances, not to see a Universal Mind in nature appears almost a brutal insensibility; and if any one intelligently professes Atheism, the more acute he is, the more distinctly we perceive that he is deficient in the Religious Faculty. Just as, if he had no sense of Beauty in anything, we should not imagine that we could impart it by argument, so neither here. Possibly some day, by a new developement of his character or by the contagion of sympathy, he may acquire Religious Insight; but for the present, we lament that he has it not, and hereby is cut off from the profoundest influences of humanity.

But to return to the marks of Design.

No stress whatever needs here to be laid upon minute anatomy, as, for instance, of the eye: it signifies not, whether we do or do not understand its optical structure as a matter of science. If it had *no* optical structure at all, if it differed in no respect (that we could discover) from a piece of marble, except that it sees, this would not impair the reasons for believing that it *is meant* to see. Of the physical structure of mind, no one pretends to know anything; but this does not weaken our conviction that the mind was meant to discern truth.

Why should any philosopher resist this judgment? One thing might justify him; namely, if there were strong *à priori* reasons for disbelieving that Mind exists anywhere except in man. But the case is just the reverse. That puny beings who are

but of yesterday, and presently disappear, should alone possess that which of all things is highest and most wonderful, is *à priori* exceedingly un-plausible. As Socrates and Cicero have pointedly asked: "Whence have we picked it up?" Its source is not in ourselves: there must surely be a source beyond us. Thus the tables are turned: we must *primâ facie* expect to find Mind in the Universe, acting on some stupendous scale, and of course imperfectly understood by us. Consequently, such Fitnesses as meet our view on all sides bring a reasonable conviction that Design lies beneath them. To confess this, is to confess the doctrine of an *intelligent Creator*, although we pretend not to understand anything concerning the mode, stages, or time of Creation. *Adding now the conclusions drawn from the Order of the universe*, we have testimony, adapted to the cultivated judgment, that there is a Boundless, Eternal, Unchangeable, Designing Mind, not without whom this system of things coheres: and this Mind we call God.

It is however right here to enter a protest against being thought to have any accurate and scientific knowledge of God. We have none. Our knowledge is essentially crude and only *approximate*; and to affect the rigour of human science is mere delusion. We attribute to God those properties of mind with which we are acquainted,—Will, Design, Forethought, and others; but it is unreasonable to imagine that we can at all more accurately sound His mind, than a dog the mind of his master.

Hence *Religious Knowledge*, from the nature of the case, is *essentially popular*; and if the scientific mind has any advantage over the unscientific in prosecuting it, the advantage is not in the direct perceptive powers of the soul and in any greater fulness of knowledge, but, negatively, in avoiding vulgar prejudices derived from false lights. Intellectual cultivation, as such, is here purely critical and destructive. If this essential imperfection in our knowledge of God be admitted, an important corollary follows: namely, that no long deductions, following logical (that is to say, verbal) processes, can be trusted in Theology. Such deductions imply full accuracy in the verbal premisses. Inference may guide our thoughts to new beliefs; but we need to discern the results directly, and not *merely* to depend on our syllogisms, if we are to have the full confidence of practical truth. What mathematician will trust to a refined and lengthy process of argument, depending on empirical formulas? In Hydraulics and Pneumatics, where the first principles are only approximately known, it is requisite to keep close to experiment, and verify every speculative inference by practical trial. A system of Theology, constructed like a treatise on Mechanics, by fine-drawn reasonings from a few primitive axioms or experimental laws, is likely to be nothing but a Sham Science.

Injustice, I think, is done to the train of thought which suggests Design, when it is represented as *a search after Causes*, until we come to a *First*

*Cause*, and there stop. As an argument, this, I confess, in itself brings me no satisfaction. It is not pretended that we understand the First Cause any more than the original phenomena: when we know not the character of His agency, how have we *accounted for* anything? or how have we even simplified the problem? A *God* uncaused and existing from eternity, is to the full as incomprehensible as a *world* uncaused and existing from eternity. We must not reject the latter theory, merely as incomprehensible; for so is every other possible theory. To believe in a divine Architect, because I cannot *otherwise* understand by what train of causation an Eye could have been made, is one thing: (does the Theist any the more understand?) but to believe in a Designer, because I see the Eye to be suited to Light, is another thing. The latter argument indeed does not in itself carry us up to a First Cause: its whole scope is to point out intellect external to man and higher than his, which suffices to justify the popular ascription of mind and personality to the power which is in Nature.

To carry out extravagantly, and as it were caricature, the doctrine of Design, is a rare perversity. There are however those, who think not only to honour God, but to be peculiarly logical and scientific, by teaching that He has designed *everything* that happens; regardless whether any Fitnesses exist to indicate Design. Every pebble washed up by the sea, every bone imbedded in the mud, was definitely intended by Him to lie where it lies.—

Now if those who so believe mean merely to say, that the so-called powers of nature are actings of the divine will, the reply is, that this is a juggle of words ; for they manifestly do *not* reveal His *moral* will. To become an agent of cruelty in tormenting a martyr, would be a crime : yet if nothing but the immediate will of God, exerted as directly as by the torturer, makes the scourge to cut and the flesh to feel, then God also is an accomplice in the crime. This conclusion is of course inadmissible. It is evaded by remarking,—what is a certain fact,—that He acts by general laws : which means, that He sees it to be more important to adhere to processes which admit of mechanical, chemical and (in short) physical definition, than to guide His proceedings by the moral right and wrong of special cases. No other solution has ever been suggested ; and this is adequate and convincing.—But what does this imply ? Why, that God's moral thoughts can no more be detected in the detailed actions of material objects, than the affections of a watchmaker by inspecting a watch : —that when the flesh of a martyr is agonized by the flames, God gives the fire power to burn him, *not because* He wishes it on that particular occasion to burn, *but because* it is better to adhere to a fixed system, so that the element which burns at one time should burn also at another. Thus the qualities of matter are on the whole, no doubt, agreeable to the divine will, and may be speciously called the actings of that will ; but the phrase is very delusive ; since the sole use of it is to propa-

gate a notion which is directly contrary to obvious fact. For in material nature Law alone rules, and *moral considerations are*, as far as we know, *uniformly overborne by mechanical ones*. Since then the details of mechanical agencies evidently denote no *moral* Will; it is a fallacy to call them Will at all. If an unmoral Will were *all* that we attributed to God, He would be a mere mechanist, coming into no contact with our hearts and souls; and we might as well be Atheists, as far as moral and spiritual things are concerned.—On the other hand, if this doctrine of Design be carried unshrinkingly into the actings of the human soul, (which is the worst form of Pantheism,) it becomes a detestable moral error, in comparison to which simple Atheism is a light mistake. Every sin of every wicked man is converted into a direct act of deity; an idea than which nothing can be more blasphemous.

Yet the persons who teach this doctrine, if accepted not as logicians, but as men labouring with sentiment which they know not how otherwise to express, may be found even to kindle in us a high devotion. Who can read the Pantheism of the Orphic Hymns or of Virgil, and not be moved by them? It is when the Pantheism which would swallow up all mind and action in the divine, is proposed as an accurate and logical system, that we are justified in intense repugnance to it, as furnishing excuses for Sin.

I feel some timidity in adverting to another form

of Pantheism, lest I should misrepresent what is so difficult in my own mind to grasp. I believe that some are called Pantheists, merely because they are hyperphilosophic Theists. They have a morbid fear of attributing human qualities to God, lest they should degrade him: thus they shun to ascribe to him, not only "body, parts and passions," but affections, judgments, designs, mind; and so his personality vanishes. Yet in fact, they do ascribe to him *quasi*-affections, *quasi*-mind, and *quasi*-personality; so that their practical creed vacillates from Atheism to Theism by the infinite vagueness of the *quasi*: and like many religionists, they have in fact two mutually refuting creeds, which may be used as the case requires. Such men may themselves be fundamentally religious, though their doctrine seduce others into irreligion.—Concerning the Divine Nature, we know that our metaphorical language *must* be inaccurate; but it is the best we have got: to refuse to speak of God as loving and planning, as grieving and sympathizing, without the protest of a *quasi*, will not tend to clearer intellectual views, (for what can be darker?) but will muddy the springs of affection. Metaphorical language in this whole subject is that which the soul dictates, and therefore must surely express our nearest approximation to truth, if the soul be the eye by which alone we see God. Jealously to resist metaphor, does not testify to depth of insight.

As to that Pantheism which deliberately and coldly merges all human Will and action in the



Divine,—which on moral grounds is so shocking, —it is at the same time so obviously self-destructive even as a logical system, that it has always been wonderful to me how it can claim intellectual respect. For nothing but a consciousness of active originating Will in ourselves suggests or can justify the idea of a mighty Will pervading nature ; and to merge the former in the latter, is to sacrifice the Premiss to the glory of the Conclusion.

#### 6. SENSE OF GOODNESS.

As soon as the intellectual belief of One Personal God has been clearly attained, the mind most rapidly superadds the idea of his *Goodness*, at least from the negative side. He is too great to be moved by petty passions ; he cannot have pleasure in our misery : the only doubt is, whether he thinks of us *individually* at all ; for, allowing his ability, some remain unconvinced of his willingness.

The great struggle of mere intellectual philosophers has always been on this side. In the abstract they admit God's goodness, nay, his moral perfection ; but doubt whether it is a part of his perfection to pay any attention to us ; and certainly, as far as *external* things are concerned, their reasonings appear unanswerable : no miracles are wrought for our convenience or welfare. What answer there is in regard to *spiritual* things, will afterwards be treated. Meanwhile, the *à priori* conviction of God's goodness is unquestioned ; and

is indeed so satisfactory, as scarcely to need with a cultivated mind such confirmations as the vulgar dwell upon:—our daily supplies of things needful and comfortable; the kind provision made for mankind at large; the adaptation of the night for rest, the day for action; the gift of inferior animals suited to become our servants, aid, or friends. Perhaps these arguments are in a certain stage of culture necessary, while the mind is unprepared either to see that they are fallacious or to understand a higher view: afterwards, far more conviction is attained from considering that *all the possible perfectness of man's spirit must be a mere faint shadow of the divine perfection*. To conceive of God at all, as an intelligent existence, and not regard Him as morally more perfect than man, is obviously absurd. Nor only so; but to volunteer limiting any of His attributes is equally absurd. Until the contrary be proved, we unhesitatingly attribute to Him boundlessness in every kind *of which we can conceive*. But on account of the last limitation, the Perfections of God are justly called a projected image of our own highest conceptions.

Philosophers however of old times dreaded to impute *affections* to God, not knowing how to distinguish them from *emotions*; both indeed being merged by the Greeks under the single term *πάθη*. Perhaps they rightly maintain that the two words denote difference of degree only, and thus may force us to admit that *affections* are attributed by us to the divinity, only metaphorically. Still, as the me-

taphor is our nearest approach to truth, and (as before said) we gain nothing by inserting a *quasi*, it is best to abide by the popular phraseology. Else, to what do we come? First, denying emotion to Him, we must deny affection, because that is nothing but a gentle emotion: next, we must deny desire. But if He wishes for nothing, He aims at nothing, He designs nothing: thus we come into collision with what appears to the mind as fact—that there *are* marks of Design in the universe. Inverting then the argument, Design leads legitimately back to Desire, and in some sense to Affection: and we call him Benign, for *desiring the welfare* of his creatures. To endeavour to resolve God into intellect without affection, is atheism under a new name; for mere intellect is not an active principle. If therefore the argument from Design leads to any God at all, it leads to a Good God, not too great to take interest in his creatures' welfare and perfection.

A difficulty is nevertheless encountered from the fact of human suffering;—suffering of the good and of the innocent,—of innocent brutes as well as men. This wide-spread reality has a thousand times distressed the purest hearts; and it would be vain to try to blink at it. But one reason why it has weighed so heavily on many, is,—that they had unduly rested the proof of the divine goodness on an opposite fact, viz. on what are called Providential Mercies. When such mercies fail, when on the contrary scourges and torment befall the righteous,

an anxious embarrassment of mind follows. Especially if the received religion have taught that external prosperity is a mark of the divine favour, misfortunes falling on good men will bring a ten-fold sting. But that side of the difficulty falls away, when we find the proofs of the divine goodness, not in events and circumstances, but in primitive and essential arrangements, and in the human mind itself, as an imperfect type of the divine.

It is true, that even in the primitive structure of things, we discover much which at first shocks us. Physical pain in many aspects appears not as an accident and an abuse, but as if definitely designed. Fierce beasts are observed to be armed for inflicting misery, and the instincts of one creature are often directed to destroy the quiet and comfort of another, which may seem not to have earned hostility. On this subject whole volumes might be written, as ample arguments have been. Here it may suffice to remark, that the difficulty turns on the *quasi-Epicurean* assumption, that Physical Ease and Comfort is the most valuable thing in the universe: but that is not true, even with brutes. There is a certain perfection in the nature of each, consisting in the full developement of all their powers, to which the existing Order manifestly tends; and any one who shall speculatively reconstruct the organized world and logically follow out his own scheme, will probably end in discerning, that the present arrangements of God are better than man could have devised. As for susceptibility to Pain, it is obviously

essential to every part of corporeal life, and to discuss the question of *degree* is absurd. On the other hand, Human capacity for Sorrow is equally necessary to our whole moral nature, and Sorrow itself is a most essential process for the perfecting of the soul. Not to have discerned the relation of Sorrow to Virtue, is perhaps the most striking defect pervading all the Greek moral philosophy.

More permanent disturbance of mind is caused to good men who have no extensive view of human nature, nor habit of mental analysis, from the prevailing wickedness of mankind. It avails not here to say, that human goodness is only a relative idea, and that however much better men were, we should still think them bad, since our standard would have risen. In a mere moral view indeed such a reply suffices; for all tribes of men have some morality. Those who are ferocious towards foreigners, are often tender hearted towards their own people; and the difference of savage from civilized virtue is one of degree. But religiously the case is otherwise; for there is a chasm between loving God and not loving him, serving him and not serving him. We can easily suppose such an improvement in human nature, that though all would of course be still imperfect, yet none should be irreligious: and men will ask, Why does a good God leave so large a part of mankind in irreligion? To many, this is an exceedingly severe trial of faith, because irreligion has been invested with *eternal* consequences, which binds the understanding in a net absolutely

inextricable. But let the Gordian knot be cut; let it be discerned that the infinite cannot flow out of the finite;—then, while we lament the actual state of the world, we shall not find it hard to understand that it has necessarily resulted from the independence of the human Will; which *must* be left free, and capable of resisting the Divine Will; otherwise, we should not be men, but brutes or machines. Thus there is nothing whatever in human wickedness, however intense, and whatever misery it causes, to inspire rational doubt of the divine Goodness.

That there is abroad among us an unsound view of supreme Goodness, (or *benevolence*, as it is called,) cannot, I think, be denied. It is akin to that spurious humanity, which so shudders at putting a criminal to death, as to prefer keeping him alive even where there is no human hope of his being recovered to virtue, but every probability of his incurring more and more desperate hardness. The benevolent man is supposed to shrink from inflicting bodily pain on any one, whether for his own good, or as a necessary process for defending others: and where this morbid notion prevails, we must expect people to be much shocked at the broad facts of the Natural History of animals, to say nothing of Man himself. But against such errors those will never be able successfully to contend, who run into the opposite and hideous extreme, of representing God as an everlasting torturer; and would tell us that this only shows His

strength of mind. Pain and Suffering undoubtedly are among God's most efficacious means for perfecting all his creatures, and, not least, man; but they must needs be with Him *means*, not *ends*, if we are to attribute to Him in any sense that which we are able to recognise as Goodness; and consequently, they must be in His plans either partial and subordinate, or finite and transitory. All Theology which contradicts this, darkens and distorts the face of God to us.

#### 7. SENSE OF WISDOM.

As long as we conceive the Deity to possess a crude omnipotence, capable of effecting everything instantaneously by his mere will or fiat, there is no room for attributing *Wisdom* to him in regard to processes and means. To absolute omnipotence there are no difficulties, no antagonist powers; and it is uncertain whether the idea of Wisdom could then be suggested, at least as different from Goodness. We see Goodness in the choice of the *ends*, Wisdom principally and perhaps solely in the direction of the *means*. The early philosophers of the East appear to have discerned, that it is impossible to hold a belief of the divine goodness together with this absolute omnipotence: human sin and misery are an insuperable difficulty. They however looked for the antagonist, which limits the divine omnipotence, in *matter*; attributing to it inherent perversity, of which he made the best, though the best was bad. At this we may smile:

yet it perhaps was only expressing in their own dialect a thought fundamentally the same as our own, at least as far as religion is concerned. We now distinctly understand that the *human Will* is the antagonist; and how formidable a one, daily experience shows. The course of History however more and more witnesses to us of the divine Wisdom, which provides for the final triumph of Truth and Right.

This is an ocean too deep to be sounded. *We* advance farther into it than our forefathers; our distant posterity may advance beyond us; but most eminently do we need wisdom ourselves, if we are to judge of Divine wisdom. We do nevertheless see, that the instincts of men, leading them to form family connections, to unite into States, to engage in active industry, to conquer foreigners, to carry on commerce, to indulge in luxury, to enjoy poetry, to study science,—mixed, as they all are, with every sort of imperfection, polluted with sin and crime or sullied with vanity and folly;—still, in the long run, advance nations towards a higher and higher level. Some nations sink, while others rise; but the lower and the higher levels are both generally ascending. Such, at least in my apprehension, is the testimony of History rightly interpreted.

Yet our belief in the Wisdom of God, as in his Goodness, is assuredly a matter of *à priori* discernment, by no means depending on learned



arguments. We cannot conceive of such a Being, *and perceive that there are difficulties to be overcome, against which mere Omnipotence cannot be invoked*,—and not attribute to him Wisdom that shall ultimately overcome those difficulties. And on this turns what is called the Divine Government of the world, or, the course of Providence. Incipient speculation vainly endeavoured to trace in detail the marks of the divine government in the history of short periods and in special events. The error of this consists in overlooking the nature of the combat; namely, that the human mind, which is to be conquered by the divine, must nevertheless preserve its liberty, and be *freely* conquered. This so nearly approaches a contradiction, that it may well be a hard and lingering struggle; and in the course of it, the imperfect will of man has its own way against that of God so frequently, that to appeal to separate events in proof of the divine government can only mislead. Abandoning however this, Faith falls back on the *à priori* certainty that He whose Designs are visible in the structure and adaptation of the things of this world, knew *what* he was designing, and would not have done anything, except for ultimate good results. To imagine that the Creator was *under constraint* to create the world, is in fact to deny the doctrine of a personal designer and to run back into that of a blind Fate: and as we must suppose Him to have acted not only freely but with a foresight what it

was that he was doing, we cannot believe in a designing mind at all without inevitably implicating it with that of Divine Providence.

An exaggerated and corrupt view of the divine wisdom is found in that spurious optimism, which extends the doctrine that "Whatever is, is best," to those details in which human folly and wickedness are peculiarly manifest. Allowance however must be made for incautiousness of language or love of paradoxical statement. Some will say that a deed of cruelty was "for the best," not meaning to include the perpetrator among those benefited: and not only so, but our very sins are often overruled to ourselves as well as to others; but to say that "we could not have done better than sin," is at once self-contradictory and morally corrupting. It was not sin, if we could not have done better.

#### 8. REVERENCE.

The affections of Awe, Wonder, Admiration, with which religion began, did not denote any necessary or fixed belief in a personal Deity, nor any activity of mind in him who experienced them. The perceptions of Order, Design, Goodness and Wisdom, do bring in a personal Deity, but they belong to the intellect more than to the soul: and all this is rather preparation for religion, than religion itself. But after that preparation, the legitimate result is the formation of a totally new affection, the foundation of which is *Reverence* towards the mighty inscru-

D

table Being whom we have discerned in the Universe. Thus the Soul once more begins to be affected, but no longer passively: it is taking its first step into self-conscious moral action: thus Reverence is the beginning of true religion. He who reverences God is a religious man, and whatever his other ignorances or defects, is an accepted worshipper.

It is hard to judge how far it is possible in an unenlightened intellect for Reverence to be directed towards the Deity without a consciousness that His eye is simultaneously upon us. One may imagine a barbarian mind to adore God, just as we might admire a mighty prince whom we saw pass by, though we knew not that he saw us. But undoubtedly this is impossible to a moderately cultivated mind: the most decisive moral effects produced by the devotional posture of the soul depend on consciousness that it has met the eye of God.

Nevertheless, it is not to be imagined that Reverence rises at once into high intelligent worship, and that Spirituality is forthwith generated. Ages rolled by in the history of our race without such a disentanglement of truth from error as to allow of this, and many years pass with most of us individually. The first great revolution wrought in religion, begins even in Polytheistic times, as with Æschylus and Herodotus, when a union begins to take place between it and morality; that is, when it is discerned that the great Power or Powers who preside over Nature must needs possess *Moral* qua-

lities *similar to our own*, though every way more perfect; after this, every elevation of the standard of human morals leads also to a more elevated conception of God's moral nature. This it is first which raises what was Paganism into rational *Religion*, and justifies us in using the word *Reverence*; nevertheless, for a long time (perhaps) the worshipper has still no vivid idea that morality concerns itself with the heart; consequently, he does not conceive of God as concerning himself with *his* heart, and God abides as it were wholly outside of his nature. A man who commits murder, who gives false judgment for bribes, perjures himself, seduces his neighbour's wife, defrauds his ward, or violates the rights of friendship and hospitality,—is believed to incur the anger of God: but those whose ordinary moral conduct is correct have no consciousness of guilt, and are able to yield to Him decorous and sincere reverence on every stated occasion.

Where the Will is strong, and Passions or Temptation moderate; where the person is engaged in outward action, and little disposed to self-inspection; a man is satisfied with his own attainments, and feels no inward pressure after a higher and higher perfection. This is often reproved as Self-righteousness by spiritual people; unduly, I think; for the mind of the worshipper is not engaged in a reflex act of self-admiration. Moreover, in that stage of low developement of the soul, a certain self-complacency is probably *desirable*: for without it, the worshipper would be frightened away, and become

wholly irreligious. Many estimable people spend the best part of their lives in this stage, without any growth of soul, perhaps exemplary in social morals, and every way amiable, with the intellectual wish to be truly religious, but with no hungering and thirsting after righteousness. They so far rise above the description just given, as to feel that to *plan* a sin is itself a sin ; but God is with them an Avenger, not a spiritual Rewarder : they reverence Him indeed, but do not at all aspire to love Him. Natural Affection and other good feelings move them more than either the pure Conscience or the Soul ; spiritually they are in a puerile stage ; their whole nature is uncorrupted and undeveloped : and, on the whole, happy is the country (if there be one in the whole world so favoured,) which has the great mass of its population in this state. Religion is to them, according to its received etymology, a bond or band ; recognised indeed by their conscience, and in so far internal ; yet not a living inward force. It rather restrains externally, than animates them : still, when we see what human nature is and has been, we must count this a great step forward. Of this respectable and worthy class, we may say : “ We have a little sister, and she has no breasts.” To drive away from our sympathies by haughty airs of superiority those who are only in an earlier stage of advancement than ourselves, is so harsh and so unwise, as to be a spot of Pharisaism upon us.

With the improvement of moral doctrine, Revelational worship will become more elevated ; or con-

versely, improved religious doctrine may elevate morality. In the stage of which we treat, neither of the two has living power, and no growth can be counted on: both wait upon external influences, and morality *chiefly* depends on the political institutions and social circumstances. Yet the link between the Conscience and the Soul is already formed, and the two are now likely to thrive or to pine together.

The commonest degraded form of Reverence is that of substituting artificial mysteries for the real mystery; which is, God in God's *own direct* works; a perversion, which leads the worshipper to venerate something different from, and of course lower than, the highest ideal of the Good and Great, which his soul is capable of forming: and this "something" is generally in modern days, God in *human* works. Such a corruption is evidently an inward and spiritual Idolatry; and must stunt the growth of the soul, giving to it a rigid and unnatural form, in which it may indeed live, but can make no thriving progress. But to expand the separate branches of this case, would be to enter into a universal crusade against erroneous religions in detail. It may be more suitable to add some remarks on the *essence* of Idolatry, in the bad sense which the word ought always to bear.

Infinity, or the Absence of Bounds, is an idea wholly relative to the mind which contemplates it. That of which I believe that I cannot know the bounds,

is practically boundless to me\*: and if there were a being revealed to my senses, so godlike in all his attributes, that in no direction could I discover infirmity or expect ever to discover it, he might become the object of devout reverence, as exalted and as pure as that which I am capable of rendering to an invisible, an eternal God.

On this account, a child even of an age at which the recognition of a God is impossible, is by no means necessarily in the state of an Atheist. At least the child of a tender and wise parent exercises towards that parent in some degree the principal actions of the religious soul;—reverence, love, trust, hope, belief. Not only is this the genuine preparation for true devotion towards God, but as it is the only possible devotion of which the child is capable, so it is the highest and best state. Moreover, we are thus led to a right view of Idolatry. Such a child, at first sight, might seem to be an Idolater; inasmuch as he worships for a god one who is not God: but this is an error. To worship as perfect and infinite one whom *we know* to be im-

\* Since this, (and a very large part of this volume,) was written, Mr. J. Daniel Morell's highly important work on the Philosophy of Religion has appeared. I find him to treat it as of great importance to hold that the Infinite is a *positive* and not a merely *negative* idea. This is to me quite unintelligible; but the intimate practical agreement which I find with him on subjects of so deep interest and first-rate magnitude as Intuition, Inspiration, Revelation, Certitude, satisfies me that here some mere verbal misunderstanding divides us.

perfect and finite, this is Idolatry, and (in any bad sense) this alone. Evidently it is degrading and pernicious to lavish acts of devotion on one whom we perceive not to deserve them; for it is an unnatural, uncalled-for self-abasement, tending to lower our ideas of goodness or greatness. Thus, to adore even with very qualified reverence a Mercury or a Bacchus, in whom no sort of moral excellence was believed to reside, is fitly stigmatized as Idolatry. But if any simple Roman, forming a certain not very high moral image in his mind of "Jupiter Best and Greatest," yet imputed to him no conduct or tempers, in which he himself discerned imperfection; then, we might indeed lament his dimness of sight, we might think him in a puerile condition, but, (remaining in this respect as he is,) it would be better for him to worship than not; just as the child is better for reverencing the human parent, and rendering to him whatever of adoration is within his compass. The old Jew must generally have conceived of Jehovah as a respecter of persons and of nations, and as in many ways partial, capricious, arbitrary and even fierce: in so far, the Jew misjudged, and his misjudgment was not harmless; yet this, being unknown to him, was no reason to *him* for not worshipping. Nor yet to *us*, as bystanders, can it be a reason for deprecating his worship. For a man can but adore his own highest Ideal; to forbid this is to forbid all religion to him. If therefore *Idolatry* is to mean anything wrong and bad, the word must be reserved for the cases in



which a man degrades his Ideal by worshipping something that falls short of it. As long as this is *not* done, two worshippers may indeed differ widely from one another in the depth or truth of their views concerning the Best and Highest, as Jacob differed from Paul; in which case he who has the purer insight will have the holier and nobler religion: yet the religion of each will be the only right thing for each, and the more ignorant of the two is Superstitious perhaps, but not Idolatrous. Indeed every one of us who is religious at all, is superstitious, exactly in the proportion in which error is implicated in his religion; and wholly to escape this is not given to man.

## PART II.

### THE SENSE OF SIN.

WHERE the traditionary impure influences of early crude religion have been happily worked off, to such a degree that the new elements are allowed to display their proper tendencies; no sooner does it become distinctly conceived that the God of nature is the God of our consciences, and that all *wrong* doing is frowned on by Him, than the two new terms Holiness and Sin are needed. To murder or to betray, are no longer merely offences against man,—which we call crime: they also offend God, and are sins. In this state were the Hebrews from even an early period; and God, as abhorring sin, was entitled by them a Holy God. Where Polytheism and its degenerate deities were honoured, such phrases could not enter the common language even of philosophers; yet, in Greece for instance, philosophers of a religious turn undoubtedly held the fundamental notion involved in them.

We cannot pretend to sound the mystery, *whence come* the new births in certain souls. To reply, "The Spirit bloweth where He listeth," confesses the mystery, and declines to explain it. But it is evident that individuals in Greece, in the third century before the Christian era, were already moving

towards an intelligent heart-worship, or had even begun to practise it. The most eminent extant proof of this, is in the beautiful hymn of Cleanthes to Jupiter. Even in old Herodotus we see the cordial response of his conscience to the sentiment which he emphatically approves,—that the Gods hate and punish the desire of sin, as itself a sin : and this is the nucleus of all spirituality. Thus God for the first time is acknowledged as Lord of the conscience, and is conceived of as a God who searches the heart. Thus, if the thought be legitimately unravelled, Duty, from having been finite, becomes an infinite thing ; thus Sin also enlarges its dimensions proportionably, and may soon assume a formidable aspect. Yet religion by no means runs forward in one stream, and we shall have to trace its separate courses.

Two very different causes may in this stage induce deep inward distress ; tenderness of conscience, and unregulated passion. God is terrible to the one as abhorring, to the latter sometimes only as punishing, sin. Both believe Him to be justly angry with them ; both inquire how they shall appease Him : out of which grows the totally new phenomenon of internal conflict.

If there be any side of practical religion over the perversions of which one may groan, it is this ; for there is none, as to which an unmanly or cruel superstition stands in so close contact with profound and reasonable sensitiveness of conscience. Self-devoting Love for a virtuous woman is scarcely

more diverse from selfish Lust, than the moral Self-Despair incident to every holy nature, from the unmoral Self-Degradation of the superstitious. Yet so common has the latter been in the history of the world, so hidden in the sacred recesses of the heart is the former ordinarily kept, that the mass of a nation in which intellectual cultivation is gaining general diffusion, is apt to mistake the former for the latter; and even religious teachers, while healing the deep wounds which superstition has planted in the soul, very often skin them over with callosity. Nowhere is truth and error, right and morbid feeling, so miserably entangled: nowhere is it harder to vindicate the sensibilities of reasonable devotion, without seeming to lay a foundation for despicable superstition. But let it be remembered, that, as human characters are not purely separable into two classes, the good and the bad, so neither is human religion; and in those who are manifestly very superstitious, there may be a larger share of true devotion than in the calmer and clearer intellects which despise their follies: for clearness of thought by no means necessarily implies depth of soul, and may be joined with a very partial experience of the most impulsive principles in man.

The reader must be many times cautioned against supposing that I am about to detail processes of heart through which I imagine that all persons pass or ought to pass. No two men, no two nations, no two ages, are quite alike. A Natural History does not imply the description of any individual, but of a

A

very few leading types which collectively represent the nature in its divergencies : and I regard these pages as only *an Essay towards* the object in question. Moreover, I am aiming principally at that, which will conduce to an understanding of practical truth and error, of spiritual realities and their counterfeits.

If the sense of sin becomes acute, so that misery follows without any action of Shame and Fear from man's knowledge of our guilt, then whatever the character of that guilt, the heart is not yet hardened and hopelessly depraved. Total and (to human eyes) hopeless depravation is in the case of *triumphant selfishness*. In the habitual seducer of innocence, the conscious trader in vice, the avaricious poisoner, the hired ruffian,—the moral paralysis may seem complete. But not only so : in the pampered and proud man, who has long regarded his own ease and indulgence as the sole end for which he and those around him live,—the voluptuary upon principle,—(even though he commit no crime and can be taxed with no physical vice or excess,)—the Soul must be so torpid, that ordinarily nothing but external calamities can rouse it. For Selfishness is the inveterate and direct antagonist to the Sense of the Infinite : the former cramps us within our own miserable body, the latter spreads one abroad into the universe. The thoroughly selfish know not what Sin means, nor what God means, nor that they have got a Soul : if once they break the bounds of Habit, so as to fall into crime, mere teaching without training is utterly

useless. Like fierce or crafty beasts, they need a cage and club, not a religious instructor.

The most respectable passion of which such are susceptible, is Shame after detection: but to such lamentable cases allusion is here made, solely in order to remark that Shame must not be confounded with Remorse. Shame is a moral suffering, excited by the eye of man; Remorse is a convulsion of the Soul, as it consciously stands under the eye of God: thus Remorse alone has anything to do with our present discussion.

Remorse for sin does certainly prove that the Soul is not dead; just as the agony of a wound proves the body to be alive: in the same sense only is the one and the other to be desired. But Remorse is not a sanctifying principle: on the contrary, it is an exceedingly dangerous one; and the Soul may die of it, as truly as the Body of acute pain. It often drives men to despair, to frenzied iniquity, and thus to final hardness of heart: consequently, such tenets of (what is called) Religion as artificially aggravate it are a horrible calamity. Its milder action impairs spiritual life more than all other causes put together: in its coarser forms it generates Asceticism and every kind of soul-burdening and body-destroying superstition. I find it too painful to pursue details of the latter kind, and see that it cannot be needed: most readers know enough of these hideous perversions. It will suffice to confine ourselves to the purely internal re-

sults of the milder sort of Remorse, which is often called a Bad Conscience before God.

The moral uses of religion are, to enliven man's conscience, strengthen his will, elevate his aspirations, content him with small supplies to his lower wants, rouse all his generous tendencies, and hereby ennoble him altogether ; but it can do none of these things effectually, except when it keeps him steadily looking into the face of the Infinite and Infinitely Pure One. Now this is exceedingly hard to do. The merely *religious* man, in whom spirituality is quite undeveloped, does not see God as a heart-searcher at all : and long after that stage is passed, and men are intellectually quite alive to this point, they yet continue, in their devotions, as it were to turn only their *side*, and a blind eye, towards God. They speak *at* Him, but not *to* Him ; for they instinctively flinch from His holy gaze. This is ordinarily true, even if no particular sin distresses the conscience ; but if they have been busying themselves to improve their conduct, if they have made solemn resolutions,—and broken them,—it is harder than ever to meet God. Especially, if with active goodwill they have tried to mend their inward faults ;—to repress evil desire, to cultivate meekness and love ;—the conscience rapidly becomes more sensitive, and taxes them with a thousand sins before unsuspected. The evil thus gets worse : the worshipper is less and less able to look boldly up into the Pure Allseeing eye : and he perhaps keeps

working at his heart, to infuse spiritual affections by some direct process, under the guidance of the Will. It cannot be done. He quickens his conscience thus, but he does not strengthen his soul: hence he is perpetually undertaking tasks beyond his strength,—making bricks without straw; a very Egyptian slavery. He believes that he *ought* to love his God with all his heart, and yet feels that he assuredly *does not*. Nay, he is constantly breaking his resolutions, being too lazy to resist habit or carried away by temptation. He at length appears like a fly in a spider's web, which is the worse entangled, the more it struggles; so that he may well seem in danger, not indeed of insanity of intellect, but of permanently morbid soul. If such a case becomes known to good people around, who have had no experience of such conflicts, they imagine that a change of air and scene is wanted, and diversion of the mind:—which may sometimes really be true, if intellectual errors concerning God have complicated the case: at least I presume there is no doubt that any prolongation of so wretched a state might disorder the brain physically, especially if it interfered with sleep. Put aside such sad and extreme cases: and let us ask, What is the spiritual cure?

Some will reply, that he needs to believe *the doctrine* of the Atonement of Christ, and of forgiveness of sins *on the sole condition* of his having Faith in it. If this is solemnly urged upon him by those whom he loves and respects, it is more than possible



that he sets about self-examination to find out whether he has got Faith or not. He perhaps always believed the proposition intellectually, and he knows that numbers of irreligious men also believe it: a mere historical Faith will not do: is then *his* Faith of the right kind? How can it be? for Faith works by Love, and exhibits itself in Spiritual Action; and he sees himself defective in both. He *has no* Faith, and he does not know how to get it; for he cannot even pray for Faith without Faith.—Thus confusion may well become worse confounded.

No intellectual proposition, however true, can, as such, bring Peace to a wounded soul; though it may incidentally and indirectly guide a man to that *action* of the soul, which alone does bring peace; namely, to an unreserved unflinching exposure of the heart to the eye of God. This is the desirable consummation, to which all the previous distress was preparatory; and nearly all of that distress might perhaps have been avoided, if the man had been better taught. Yet no one can say how much severe goading one or another may need, before he dares to rush as it were straight into God's\* presence, consciously unfaithful and uncleansed. To many a man perhaps, his own act is as one of desperation. He faces that bright and pure Sun, which seems to scorch his eyes, and says: "Slay me, O God, if Thou wilt; I deserve it; I am miserable; but leave me not sinful thus. Put me

\* Or *Christ's* presence; which is only a change of name. In future this will not need mention.

to shame: I *am* shameful. Behold! I hide nothing. Thou art Light. Expose my darkness. I will not palliate. I am worse than I know. Show me all that I am. I cannot heal myself. If I must die, I will die in Thy Light."

Oh, wonderful simplicity of Faith! he *is* faithful, and knows it not. He has trusted himself to the Judge of all the Earth; he has believed in His good will, and in His eternal purpose to destroy sin; he has himself become a real hater of sin: and, —though he knows not why,—he is *therefore* already in perfect peace. He has followed conscience through cloud and storm into the fiery presence of the Eternal, till fear has dropt off in His nearness. The harmony of Heaven and Earth is begun within the man's soul, because his will is subdued to God's will; and thus Self Despair, joined to Faith, has led to Peace with God. He is guileless now as a child: quiet therefore and easy, though in fullest consciousness that God is reading his heart to the bottom. Before, he thought of God as a severe judge; now, he feels that he is a compassionate Father \*.—*Guilelessness* is the whole secret of divine peace; and happy are any who

\* Admirably has that glorious hymn-writer Charles Wesley adapted the words of Jacob wrestling with the Angel to this subject.

Yield to me now, *for I am weak,*  
*But confident in self-despair;*  
 Speak to my heart, in blessings speak;  
 Be conquer'd by my instant pray'r.  
 Speak,—or Thou never hence shalt move,—  
 And tell me, if thy name be LOVE.

attain it without a convulsion of soul preceding it. Some hearts fight longer and harder against God's full supremacy; others perhaps yield so easily, that none of this description applies: of that we shall have more to say in the next Section. But come how it may, this is the thing. "Blessed is he to whom the Lord imputeth not sin; *in whose spirit there is no guile.*"

The value however of this experience to the soul is great, because it now has learned how to get peace, especially if the phenomena have been brought out so sharply, that the intellect can read the case without practical error. Unhappily, most persons mix up the theories of others and fixed traditional doctrines, with their own realities; and hence entanglement and frequent mischief. But, from the establishment of this guilelessness of heart, and peace flowing out of it, a new era of spiritual life necessarily commences. God himself appears practically *in a new relation*, as a Father;

'Tis LOVE! 'Tis LOVE! Thou died'st for me:

I hear Thy whisper in my heart:

The morning breaks; the shadows flee:

Pure, Universal LOVE Thou art.

To me, to all, thy bowels move:

Thy nature and thy name is LOVE.

My pray'r hath pow'r with God! the grace

Unspeakable I now receive:

Through Faith I see Thee face to face,

*I see Thee face to face,—and live!*

In vain I have not wept and strove;

Thy nature and Thy name is LOVE.

for though the intellect may long ago have approved that title, the soul had previously no true filial feeling: thus the case passes over into that reserved for our third Part; which it is not convenient here to pursue. But when Peace is established, the first great problem is solved. Only by meeting the gaze of God can the impure soul be purified: this had been too terrible a process; and the soul had shrunk from it. Why? in part, because it was not thoroughly in earnest; it wished to be better, but not infinitely better; it wished so to act, as not to incur just reproof from God, but probably it did not wish to have him as a constant resident in the heart: His All-seeing eye searching the soul was submitted to as a necessity, not desired as a glorious privilege. But now, things are changed; he says calmly, "Thou, Lord, knowest thy servant;" and wonderful to say or think, the finite impure man has complacency in the pervading presence of the infinite and pure God. Now therefore a new course of sanctification may commence: for it is only by contact with God's spirit that the human spirit can possibly be sanctified.

The cursed invention of Mediators is designed to hinder this contact; and have too effectually done their work, whether they be the lower gods of polytheism, or priests, saints, and a Virgin. *All* Christianity might have been thus blighted, only that, side by side with the growth of the Mediatorial idea, the reverential imagination of the Church at Antioch sublimated the Mediator into something spiritually

undistinguishable from the morally perfect and omnipresent God, and thus neutralized the doctrine; saving spirituality at the expense of logic. Paul consequently was able truly to say: "We all beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord (Christ) with his face unveiled, are transfigured into the same image, from glory to glory, *seeing that it is by a Lord who is Spirit.*" Thus he and they contemplated Christ, not on the pages of a book, but *in the mirror* of their own souls.

---

Oh, how many derangements do old habit and ever-young passion and the world around us offer to the progress of the new life! But pass we all these. Suppose the worshipper faithful and brave, never flinching from his new course; and that, animated by God's presence, his Will assumes energy so great, that all Duty is successfully performed, all temptations scornfully trodden down, so that the kingdom of God within him seems to go forth conquering and to conquer. Are then his conflicts past, and is his peace perpetual? It *ought* to be so: it perhaps *will* be, when the experience of one is so made available to another, that ignorance is dispelled. But now, each man seems to learn for himself from the beginning, and discovers little by little to his great discomfort what should have been known long ago from such as Paul and Luther and Bunyan. And what is this? Why, it is discovered that the Will has no power over the Affections.

While *both* were in disorder, while a man's Will was half for God and half for independence from God, he did not find this out distinctly: he then blamed *his entire nature*. But now that his Will is really subdued, he begins to discern how exceedingly little power it has over his Affections, and to regard *one half only* of his nature as diseased\*. He desires to speak with meekness; but he finds himself excited and bitter, if not in word, yet in heart. He desires to be chaste; and his thoughts become impure. He desires to worship God in spirit; but his mind wanders into countless imaginations. He desires to be contented; and his heart swells with a foolish ambition. He desires to be humble; but he is mortified that somebody gave him too little honour. He desires to be simple; yet he said something to make himself admired. And so all through, "when he would do good, evil is present with him." Many persons (perhaps most) are liable to be reduced hereby to a state of distress, scarcely less than that from which they had escaped: especially if, from the peace for a short time enjoyed, they fancied they were really going to be as perfect as they sincerely entreated to be made.

\* "I delight in the law of God after the inward man [The Will]: but I see *another law* in my members, warring against the law of my mind; and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members." Rom. vii. 22, 23. From this phenomenon, it has been almost inevitable for Christians to conceive of the right Will as a pure and divine spirit, recently infused, and the reluctant or perverse Affections to be an old or corrupt nature, for which (now-a-days) Adam is made to bear the blame.

Thus men, aiming at a spiritual life, generally become passionate in invective against the unmanageable side of their nature,—that very side of it in which alone impulse resides,—and denounce it as totally evil and incurable. Paul calls it *a body of death*, to which he regarded himself as miserably tied. Indeed it may seem to be impossible that a really vehement and passionate desire after God's perfect holiness should be excited in the human soul, and its utterance yet retain logical coherence and be duly measured. The same Paul who so severely lashes his nature, and declares: "I myself with the mind [Will] serve the law of God, *but with my flesh* [Affections] *the law of SIN*:" yet distinctly shows us, that he had come to the conclusion that this was no *sin* at all, but simply *imperfection*. For he disowns this part of his nature, as not himself: "If then I do that which I would not, it is no more I that do it, but Sin that dwelleth in me." His comfort, his sufficient comfort, is, not, that Christ has atoned for it,—(that indeed might prove too much; for it would apply to sins of the Will, as well as to imperfection of the Affections,)—but, that nothing but his Will is he himself. If his Will commands his Heart not to covet, and yet the Heart will covet, Paul declares, "My flesh has sinned, but I have not." Of course then he had nothing to *repent* of: he felt grief, vexation, disappointment, but not remorse; not one sting of it; and therefore no cloud passed between his soul and God.

Now this is of first-rate importance,—to discern,

what is *popularly* called, "the total depravity of human nature," but more correctly, the essential, eternal imperfection of every created existence: and, that that imperfection *to which the Will does not consent*, must not be appropriated by us as Sin. In order to be morally PERFECT, we should need at once infinite wisdom and affections of infinite power; and these are the incommunicable prerogatives of God: hence every creature,—angels and archangels, beatified saints, and Adam fresh from his Maker's hand,—every one is morally imperfect, and, if the vulgar phraseology were justifiable, would deserve to be called *sinful*. Perfection, like omnipotence, inheres in God only: "HE only is Holy." It is calamitous that so grave an error as the confounding of imperfection with sin should have been built up out of passionate phrases of St. Paul, when the context itself shows that what he calls Sin was not counted by him as his own deed, nor therefore needed to be repented of: after such experience of the mischief, we ought\* never to call anything Sin, to which the Will does not consent. This is one out of a thousand examples of the mischief

\* That is: never, when we affect to speak accurately. But poetry must have Saxon vocables, and devotion, like common love, spurns logical exactness. When a hymn-writer chooses to say: "Yet I mourn *my stubborn will*; Find *my sin* a grief and thrall;" &c., it is useless to bid him alter "*stubborn will*" into *reluctant affections*, and "*sin*" into *imperfection*; and yet this, and this only, is what he really means. Nothing is left for us, but to use interpretation, whenever is the right time for using the critical faculty:—but this is not during moments of devotion, as to which mere words matter little.



arising from the current Bibliolatry and its developments. For in consequence, upright souls which find that they are still imperfect, fall into a bad conscience, as those who have incurred guilt ; and have, as it were, to begin their inward life anew by confession and repentance : and when this has happened ten, twenty, fifty times, religion becomes a round of weary groaning. Nay, what is far worse, some get to hate themselves morbidly, and to be frightened away from God's presence : and may even in some distressing instances seem to have relapsed into a deplorable state of apathetic unspirituality ; differing from the untaught world only in a profound, dangerous and miserable self-despair. Self-despair joined with trust in God, is a beginning of vigorous spiritual life : self-despair without hope from God is too awful to think of.

If the divine life in man is to grow steadily and healthily, it is absolutely essential to have an abiding peace ; for, as was said, without this the soul will not and cannot meet the eye of its God often enough and regularly enough to feel its ever-purifying influence. Hence all artificial causes of a bad conscience are to be looked on as unbearable nuisances. All the trash of ceremonies and Sunday-strictness *imposed by one upon another* deserves to be denounced quite as indignantly as Paul denounced the Jewish yoke, which some would have imposed on the Gentiles. Those who think much of outward worship may go on comfortably with their routine ; but a man of sensitive inward work-

ing conscience is made miserable by the endless "sins" in which it involves him; and until his intellect ripens to discern that the whole is a fiction void of binding force, he is liable to cruel inward mischief from it. We have too much, far too much to do, in trying to live to God: it is madness to superadd artificial duties, calling them perhaps "means of grace." If we find good from them, they *are* means of good, and let us thank God for them: if we do not, then they are not duties. But more of this afterwards.

To wind up: we must distinguish between our failures through want of power in the spiritual affections, and failures from a double mind and traitorous will; and must on no account scourge ourselves for the former. But it may be asked: May we not thus delude ourselves, by fancying that our will was with God, when in fact it was not?—Most true; there is no way to hinder self-delusion, where a man has a double mind. Whether good rules be given to him or not, he will needs delude himself. But the single-minded soul is distinguished by the promptitude of its aspiration after better success, the moment that failure is discerned. Not merely is there vexation at the failure, (which might denote mortified pride,) but an instant breathing to God, "Oh that my heart were as Thy heart, and that wholly!" And this instantly renews the soul's intercourse with God, so that complaint is not self-reproach; and instead of unprofitable dark solitary repentance, it has the

E

light of God's countenance imparting cheerfulness and strength for a new effort.

Mere moralists may still object that if a man is allowed to distinguish between himself and his "flesh," there is no knowing what immorality may arise: hence St. Paul's language has been elaborately explained away, as not said of himself, but of some other man! or of himself, in his old unconverted state. I fear to characterize this fancy, as it deserves. But it may be well to add, that St. Paul's self-exculpation can never be applied to duties which Law demands of us. For Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the ungodly and disobedient. It is addressed to the common capacities of nature, and puts forth claims on our Conduct, not on our Affections. There are morbid or very ill-trained persons, whose wills are scarcely responsible even for their conduct: unless we mean to class ourselves with these, we cannot claim any exemption. If we cannot observe even outward duties, our feebleness of Will is clearly to be blamed, and not the feebleness of spiritual Affections: thus we have incurred guilt.

In the general discussion of this Part, regard has been had to the development of a Soul never wilfully sinful, but falling into an evil conscience, with all its miseries, while striving with more or less honesty in the right direction. But what of one, which is stung by the distinct knowledge that it has again and again sinned wilfully; nay, in

spite of much light and many resolutions? Suppose a man to have lived for weeks and months in conscious sin, of course unable to approach God, with soul dark and crushed, knowing that he ought to repent, and yet not able to repent. But one day, he knows not how or why, (in part, it may be, because he has *forgotten* his worst sins, so that they have ceased to trouble him,) his heart is drawn into a strange boldness, and rises into some sort of prayer or praise,—as perhaps on the occurrence of some happy external event, which gives him serenity and gladness. What is to be said of this? Is he very presumptuous? Should he be told to go and *repent first*? Is a long course of confession, probation and penance essential? This is interesting enough to deserve some discussion.

Christian writers will probably with one voice declare that a heathen at his first conversion (and by parity of reasoning, one who has all his life hitherto lived without any spiritual religion) will be right and wise in ignoring the past course of iniquity as an ugly dream. They encourage him to “put off the old man” by a single effort, and “put on the new;” to spurn with disgust and shame, but without distinct and separate acts of repentance, the whole scene of darkness and folly; to believe that God freely forgives him everything past, and henceforth to fix his eyes and heart on all things that are pure and good and lovely. And the wisdom of this is manifest. For no man is made better by dwelling on the de-

tails of his own iniquity : either it will accustom him to evil, or it will horribly discourage him. Dark and weak as is one who just begins to breathe a purer air, and to raise his spirit towards the Father of spirits, even the fond dream that he is now, all at once, about to pass into blissful purity would scarcely be more than is wanted to stimulate and confirm his new life. No one is so ignorant and cruel, as to insist that this man's memory shall rake up one by one all his misdeeds, in order to make adequate confession of them before God. In fact, if possible, he cannot do better, for the present at least, than utterly to forget them all.

Yet, strange to say, this principle is by very many reasoners quite reversed, when the case is that of one to whom inward religion is not new. The person whose resolutions have proved too weak for his passions, or who after knowing something of spiritual worship has become hardened into neglect of God by the occupations of business or calls of pleasure ; such a one, it is often imagined, not only has harmed his own soul, but has in some sense injured the most High. A ledger (as it were) is supposed to be kept, in which all his offences are duly entered ; and a special process is requisite for obliterating, one by one, the items of his gross debt. Confession of each separately to the Searcher of hearts is thought to be the smallest part of the necessary ordeal : Romish religion even adds, that the details of iniquity must be told out to a fellow-man ; a practice, which is not only enslaving, but horribly

corrupting. All this however proceeds upon an extravagant misconception of the nature of sin, as if we puny insects could by our folly or wickedness inflict some sting upon the Infinite God. It cannot be imagined that he desires anything from or in us, but such perfection as we are capable of: when we have been brought into a right temper, how can it trouble him that we were formerly in a wrong one? That is past and gone, and leaves no trace of itself certainly upon *him* \*. Many a painful consequence indeed it may entail on *us*: and here the real and the whole question is, how to escape its inward mischief.

That mode of proceeding which is confessed to be wise on the conversion of a profligate heathen, certainly applies equally to all other cases of wilful sinners, as soon as any turn of mind comes, from whatever cause. They cannot be too quick in getting *out* of the evil feelings and *into* holier thoughts and aspirations. The great difficulty is to do this at all: let not artificial impediments be superadded, by prescribing a routine of confession and of bargaining for forgiveness. Does the anxious moralist insist that suffering for our sins is essential to permanent

\* There has been much needless discussion, on the question: "*How we know* of the connection between Repentance and Forgiveness." Surely we necessarily believe it, as soon as we discern that the highest human perfection is our best type of the Divine. So the Hebrew Psalmists unhesitatingly believed in the absolute Forgiveness of God. So the Lord's Prayer, in one petition, (if rightly translated,) teaches, unless I mistake, that God may be expected to forgive, "*since even we* (men) forgive those who trespass against us."

amendment? does he demand remorse from us as a pledge of sincerity? Let him say Contrition, but not Remorse. To hate the past self is good, to hate the present self is a deadly thing. Whoever hates himself hates God also. The great, the imminent danger is, that the soul which begins to turn once more towards God, should exaggerate the difficulties in the way of its restoration: and often, nothing can be happier, than if in a fit of unreasoning enthusiasm it suddenly conceive itself to be the special object of the divine favour\*. Let the man but once come really under a sense of God's unchangeable complacency, and he will then soon mourn bitterly enough for his sins, and profitably to himself. "Thou shalt be loathsome in thine own eyes, *when I am pacified with thee* for all that thou hast done."

This is the rationale of the recovery of men from deplorable hardness or remorse, under the influence of doctrine commonly esteemed fanatical, but practically proved to be far more powerful to convert and rescue than any wisdom of the mere moralist. The preacher anxiously warns the sinner not to think that he must make himself good and righteous

\* Well meaning men have been unduly frightened respecting this, by a few monstrous instances of Fanaticism, which have appeared even in modern times; of which none is more notorious than that of the Anabaptists of Munster. In such cases, Conscience has vanished out of Religion; Reverence is disintegrated and dissolved, and a hideous lawless Paganism remains. Such diseases of the Soul are like Pestilences in the physical world; horrible when they occur, but rare or impossible unless foulness has long been allowed to stagnate.

*before* he comes to Christ; but let him "come as he is, ragged, wretched, filthy, with all his sins about him:" let him believe that he is accepted, and he shall instantly be made whole; he shall be received with joy, as the prodigal son returning: a ring shall be placed on his hand and shoes on his feet: the angels shall be glad because of him: he shall be justified in the midst of all his ungodliness, and his Faith shall be counted as Righteousness.—Undoubtedly if the hearer imagines that this is some process for *enabling him to continue* in sin without evil consequences, it is a ghastly delusion; but if he accepts it as a method of *freeing him from the power* of inward sin, as well as from all farther spiritual consequences, it is precisely the thing needed for his case. His faith or his credulity or his enthusiasm (whichever men may choose to call it) grasps at the idea, that, in spite of all that has passed, he may yet live a purer and a better life under the smile of God; and the fact of his grasping at it attests the birth of higher desires, which forthwith become cultivated by exercise and (in happy instances) are ultimately triumphant.

There is no single thing which more strikingly shows the gross blindness of common moralizing divines concerning the Soul, than the incredulity and contempt which is cast upon *sudden* conversions. Sudden political revolutions are never treated as incredible or marvellous. It is readily understood that in a State two or three different powers are struggling together with independent force; and often



with alternate success. At last a party which was depressed rises in sudden might, deposes that which held the chief power, and assumes the helm. Three days in Paris have twice sufficed to effect this momentous change; and to avow belief in it, is not called twaddle and cant.

But these moralizers clearly do not know that in the narrow compass of one man's bosom two or three powers are often striving together for mastery. Rather, they know of nothing but "Reason and Passion;" and as Reason acts gently and very steadily, and only Passion by violent impulse, they can understand indeed that a man may fall into dire sin all in a moment, but not how he can rise out of it all in a moment. This is because they know nothing of the forces of the Soul, which are true Passions, and capable of being very violent. Nor only so; but just as in Political, so too in Spiritual conflict, any great abuse of power by one party is apt to damage its cause and irritate the opponents into vehement exertion: hence many a tyrant and many a dynasty has been ejected in consequence of some wanton and atrocious deed. Exactly in the same way is the paradox to be explained, (which is a fact, whether people choose to be scandalized at it or not,) that the commission of some unusually great sin has been known to lead to a change of the whole character for the better; in fact, to a marked spiritual conversion. A well known case is that of Colonel Gardiner, whose life was written by Dr. Doddridge. This officer had actually planned and

arranged a deed of adultery, (which however was defeated in a way not recorded,) and in that very night underwent a violent reverse of character, being ever afterwards not only a pure and blameless, but a deeply spiritual man. It is rarely that cases so startling are freely disclosed: but it needs no great insight into the soul to understand the principle of such things. A man of impulsive passion and moderately strong will, is perhaps ordinarily correct enough to satisfy his conscience; and if now and then carried a little beyond bounds, he yet manages to keep up a good opinion of himself. But if his passions on some day run out to fearful riot, his self-complacency is mortified, his conscience is deeply stirred, his soul (for the first time perhaps) is called into activity: a general insurrection of the whole man takes place against the tyrannous usurpers; and, though beforehand the issue of such a struggle cannot be foreseen, no one who has even a feeble knowledge of God's power in the soul will be incredulous about its ever ending victoriously. Moralists perhaps think, that even if true, such a thing is dangerous to tell, lest any should sin boldly, and hope for the same good luck. But that is too absurd: a man cannot *hope* for that, which he would not receive if offered. The profligate will never want *excuses* for sin; but they are not the persons to be most considered, even if to hide facts would do them any good. Our business is, if possible, to understand aright both the weakness and the power of the soul; and what throws

light on it, must not be suppressed for prudery and decorum and fancied expediency.

But perhaps there is another illusion. It is alledged that *every* evil deed goes to establish a Habit, and thereby weakens the moral principle: hence that a sin should be the antecedent of a conversion, is thought to be self-contradictory. But though a series of deeds committed *not* under strong passion make a habit, it is not true of a single deed of passion. A child that slaps its nurse with little or no provocation and is not checked, will probably gain a habit of ill using her: but a boy who in sudden passion should strike his mother violently, having never done anything of the sort before, would probably be horror-smitten at his own deed, be melted into tears, and become far more affectionate and dutiful than previously: and this, though no spiritual, but only moral, forces are called out. Exactly so, in the ups and downs of an early struggling spiritual life, when powerful passions sway the man both ways, it is certain that a wilful sin, by the agony which it causes to the soul, may act like an arrowshot in a sleeping lion, who springs at once furiously on his enemy, and dashes him to the ground, though sore wounded himself. For it is not more true that the flesh lusteth against the spirit, than that the spirit lusteth against the flesh; and when awakened to danger and its mettle roused, the spirit is by far the mightier, as that needs must be, which is in contact with God. Hence also man is ennobled, not by weakening his lower nature, but

by unfolding and strengthening his higher\*. It is absolutely impossible to turn the above, by any legitimate argument, to an immoral purpose. For if a person deliberately said, "I will sin, *in order* so to move my soul," he would manifest a state of soul which *could not* be so moved. Only full life can suffer keenly; and this man has no life.

In the later progress of the soul, Habit becomes of value; but if in the early stage the views of mere moralists were true, its prospects would be sad indeed: nor could it possibly contend against the passions. On the contrary, its great forces are all impulsive, and capable of being very intense. St. Paul, who knew something of them, scruples not to call them (*in* the soul) the same mighty power of God, as raised Christ from the grave to the highest heaven. And certainly, when he was inviting men to sacrifice all earthly prospects for a heavenly hope, nothing short of an energetic inward spirit which they felt to be of God, could possibly animate them to accept such proposals. Hence too he calls the Spirit within them "the earnest" of their future inheritance.

But indeed the remark may be made on all *intuitive* impressions; that they are at first sudden and impulsive. The beauty of a scene, of a statue,

\* This is only one point of the absurdity involved, in *Fasting* in order to weaken the passions. But in fact I believe it does *not* weaken them, even temporarily, to any spiritual purpose; for sin is in the mind, not in the body. Irritability, with other pectishness, is confessedly increased by this Babylonish practice.

of a human face, strikes us as with impetus. Not that we discern it always at first sight : we may have needed some familiarity with it before we see it in the right position and gather up into a single whole that on which the effect depends ; but at last we catch it all in a moment, and perhaps wonder why it never so affected us before. In modern England indeed the most powerful love which man feels for woman is founded, not on mere beauty, but on the internal character ; and as this is developed piecemeal, Englishmen do not in general fall in love very suddenly. But in countries where women are secluded, where in consequence beauty is rarely seen and free courtship is impossible ;—all the accounts which we read, of men falling in love with beautiful maidens, represent it as so sudden and violent, as to strike us with incredulity and laughter. We justly regard this as a less advanced, a more puerile, stage of human nature ; yet it is not a less instructive illustration of the mode in which intuition affects the soul.

The thing to be *desired* undoubtedly is, such a constant presence of God's Spirit with our spirit, that there may be no more "variableness or shadow of turning" in us than in Him ; that our hearts may be altars, whence the smoke of incense perpetually rises to heaven ; that our Wills may be animated by power uniformly equal to our task, so that Duty may be nothing but healthy exercise, without labouring or groaning. But if this is not yet attained, if we get into a stagnant lethargic at-

mosphere, which threatens to benumb us, we must be thankful for an occasional healthful typhoon, and not cavil that it is not a trade wind. Individual character and circumstances of temptation differ so much, and false theories so derange the proper progress of things, that it is delusive to assert any result to be *generally* true; but it seems impossible to doubt that *in a healthy* state, the internal life of spiritual men tends to become more and more tranquil, until the observer can detect no disturbances. Happy are those, to whom Habit gives that steadiness which the moralist desires, without that languor which the spiritualist dreads.

If it appear that Selfishness is the most unmanageable disease in spirituals, (since it is a virtual death of the Soul, when complete,) and that a pure Enthusiasm is its proper antagonist, a *cold* nature would seem to be the least hopeful soil for spiritual growth. The *passionate* temperament (which is however not to be judged of by superficial display) generally gives greater depth and power of life, with more capacity of sorrow and joy, though also, especially if the original moral training has been neglected, far greater danger of sudden sin and public scandal. And here I am led to avow, that the Churches of England, and that decorous part of society to which they set the tone, appear to take a less true and less Christian view of the relative enormity of sins, than the common heart of the world takes. The world broadly distinguishes sins of selfishness and malignity as unbearable, and imposes on them

many opprobrious epithets,—mean, sneaking, rascally, &c. : and these are precisely the sins which of all others indicate that a man has no stamp of the Infinite Spirit upon him. But sins of passion,—not *so* indulged as to injure or betray others,—the world treats very mildly: and these, though of course implying the temporary conquest of the soul by baser impulses, yet by no means denote the total absence of God's Spirit, if the sins have been unpremeditated or the passion violent. Mean and griping conduct, especially if habitual, is a far worse spiritual sin than a bout of drunkenness; yet a Church will animadvert on the latter and dares not touch the former:—probably because it is forced, like the Law of the land, to act by general rules. Thus we get the astonishing result, that while the Church (in its treatment of transgressors) typifies the Law, the World comes nearer to the Gospel! As the Publicans and harlots were nearer to the kingdom of God than the Pharisees, so were Byron and Shelley than many a punctual reciter of creeds: and this, the world well knows, but the Churches have no mouth to declare. Out of the above grow moral difficulties concerning all church discipline whatever, which, I confess, now seem to me of a most unmanageable kind.

It is time to sum up this Part. Its subject has been, the struggle of the soul to get and keep peace with God, and to conquer sin. Peace is no mere matter of *comfort*, but essential for sanctification: hence it is impossible to overrate its import-

ance. If it is obtained and kept, there is indeed grief, pain, mortification, humiliation, in finding that our Affections do not keep pace with our Will; yet a copious dash of this sort of humiliation seems to be beneficial, implying, as it generally does, high aspirations rather than very low performances. The man who, after being crushed under a sense of sin, has been healed by God, is sore no longer, yet permanently tender;—a tenderness felt through his whole spiritual and moral nature: hence he is mild in his judgments of others, while severe on himself. He has also probably much contentment and balance of soul, not only inspired by a cheerful sense of the mild light of God, under which he lives, but also as he feels himself unworthy of all his enjoyments: thus he tastes a new sweetness in the common goods of life. To be honoured by men pains him; to be disesteemed by those who are not spiritual, does not trouble him,—except in regard to that outward innocence, of which common men are excellent judges. And while he has thus learned to be abased, he has in some degree learned also how to abound. If new earthly wealth and grandeur were to flow in upon him, they would no doubt be a temptation; yet his previous discipline would above all things aid him to bear them. To endure affliction and sorrow, such sorrow especially as wrings the tender affections, he is perhaps not yet armed;—indeed, who is?—still, should such trials come, they will probably tend to the perfecting of his spirit, by opening new doors of access to God.



Meanwhile, if such mellow fruits of righteousness as have been named, are borne by his having been painfully exercised, he will not think that the time of conflict was thrown away. God does not expose all to the very same thing, and let not *us* cramp all men to one form: but He leads us through ways that we know not, dark and various, until by his mercy, having become guileless before Him, we dwell with Him, and are satisfied by the sight of Him. Whoso has gained the harbour, needs not care about the course. To have had to undergo spiritual conflict through ignorance or through perversity (the only causes of it) is certainly not in itself matter of congratulation; yet it may be a process not without positive advantages for those who are called on to comfort men in spiritual sorrow "by the comfort wherewith they themselves were comforted of God." But faithful, resolute, energetic souls do not rest in simple peace and moral tranquillity: they soar into a higher blessedness, and blend in some upper part of the heaven-streaming current with those who are about to be described in the next Part.

---

*Postscript to Part II.*

Just as mariners or travellers delight to remember dangers past, so do practical Christians: and the distresses of their inward life have furnished abundant themes to Christian hymn-writers innumerable.

From these, without undergoing their throes, we may gain rather ample knowledge of their experience, more pleasingly, and with far less of logical theory intermixed, than in the writings of the Puritans. Moreover, as the harsher realities of suffering are softened in poetry, there is nothing in such reading to wring the heart.

## PART III.

### SENSE OF PERSONAL RELATION TO GOD.

#### § 1. *A reply to philosophy.*

BEFORE proceeding to the real subject of this Part, it may be well to notice an objection of philosophy. Some will say, that in all spiritual action, the Soul itself is the only agent, and that the idea of God acting upon it is a mere dream : that it has, no doubt, its own feelings ; but these feelings do not point to anything that goes on in the mind of God, which is essentially unchangeable towards us.

My general reply is, that I do not write as a metaphysician, or pretend to any but a popular phraseology. Time may disclose Laws in the actings of God towards the Soul ; nay, none imagine that he acts capriciously, except a remnant of a school which veils caprice under the word *sovereignty*. There can be no objection to Science exploring spiritual action with purely scientific ends, provided that it ascertain the popular facts correctly, on which it is to refine. But this proviso includes, first, that the men of science shall treat with tender thoughtfulness the facts alledged by the unscientific men who have felt them ; and shall cease to shower on

them vague phrases of contempt, as mysticism, fanaticism, &c.; secondly, that the would-be scientific classifier of facts *shall not strangle the facts in their birth*. Now this is what those are trying to do, who lay down, that a man is to pray for spiritual benefit, not, expecting that God will deign to notice him,—but, because it is a mode of influencing his own heart. This would turn us into feeble hypocrites. What! can a man go, as if before God, and say,—“O God, I ask Thee to subdue this or that evil desire, knowing that Thou hearest not, but hoping that by this farce I shall call my own soul into action.” O foolish philosopher, this will not do. No spiritual facts at all will be left for the man of science, if we commence thus.

It is axiomatic, that man can no more understand the mind of God, than a dog that of his master. Our clearest notions must be rude guesses: our vocabulary is all one of transference, and of course enormously vague: yet the philosopher, who, in anxiety for scientific accuracy, refuses to become experimentally acquainted with the facts, is the last man to succeed in clearing our conceptions or perfecting our phraseology. Meanwhile, as a dog lives on his master's smile and rejoices, so is it fit that we should live on the smile of God, though knowing only the outer edge of His heart and mind.

“But,” (will the philosopher say?) “it is all well and happy for *you* to believe that God hears your prayer: perhaps I wish I could believe it too; but unfortunately I cannot: you offer me no proof.”

But what sort of proof could satisfy him? If he say—"None;" this would imply that there is an essential absurdity in the case; but we must then call on him to point out the absurdity; since *we* see none. But if he admit that the thing is not in itself absurd and self-contradictory, then, it seems to me, he cannot ask any other proof, than exactly that which abounds: viz. the unanimous testimony of spiritual persons to the efficacy of prayer. He may reply: "Yes, but perhaps that is the heart acting on itself"; but he might deal exactly in the same way with the evidence of sense. *Perhaps* there is no outer world, and our internal sensations are the universe! Syllogistic proof of an outer world will never be gained, nor yet syllogistic proof that a God exists or listens to prayer.

We well know that there are persons, who say that *substance* and *matter* are illusive terms; and that a substance is nothing but a congeries of forces, coherent and repulsive. It may be so; but we should not attain greater accuracy by expunging the two words from our vocabulary. Nay, the philosopher who so corrects us, has, after all, no more definite idea of the reality than the vulgar have. He cannot conceive of one centre of immaterial forces pushing away another centre of immaterial forces. The imagination wants something material for a force to push against. The vulgar mode of conception and speech may be inaccurate; but, as also in spiritual matters, it is the best we can get. Not by subtlety of thought, *but by specific sense*,

do we gain any acquaintance with the realities of things. Now the Soul is the specific sense in which we come into contact with God. Let us not deal more slightly with its testimony, than with that of the Touch or the Taste.

The active part of man consists of powerful instincts. Some are gentle and continuous, others violent and short; some baser, some nobler; all necessary. A moral control over them all is desirable; and by all means let any vagaries of the Soul (as in all fanatical religion) be severely checked by our moral principle. With this limitation, the instincts have an inherent right to exist and to act; and the perfection of man depends on their harmonious energy. As operating alike on all ages, perhaps the instinct which seeks after God and the Infinite is the most powerful in man. Let us follow out this great and glorious tendency. Let us give free play to our nature, without fear of the philosophers: we shall get holiness, peace and joy; and may haply bequeath facts for some future man of science. If we drink the heavenly nectar ourselves, others may analyze our juices when we are dead.

The objection here considered, comes ill from a moralist who believes the originating power of the human Will: for *he* can no more *prove* that Will is not mere Desire, than I can prove that it is God's influence and not my own which I feel within. But we believe in Will, because we cannot act wisely and well except by adopting the belief: for if there

be no self-originating Will in us, it is still useful for practice to believe that there is; and the man who most knows the Truth, is then most likely to act foolishly! This is so intense a paradox, as to convince most people that the hypothesis is false, or, that there is a self-moving Will in each of us.—Now every word of this argument equally applies to the belief that God acts upon the soul, when the soul approaches Him. The objector then ought in consistency to become a Necessarian,—to deny the propriety of praising or blaming, to treat self-reproof as ridiculous, and cut away the springs of moral as well as spiritual life. Nay, if he will be logical, he ought farther to be an Atheist; for, as insisted in the first Part, if we know nothing of Will in ourselves, it is absurd to pretend that we know anything of it in the Universe. Thus, the objection treated is frivolous, unless it means to destroy both Morals and Religion entirely.

If it be admitted that in the Infinite One there dwell (what we may approximately call) Designs, Desires, Affections; then surely all his creatures who also have affections, and minds capable of discerning Him, may both love and be loved by Him. That we *ought* to revere Him, is as trustworthy a moral judgment as any other, as soon as His existence is discerned. That he perceives and approves our revering Him, is a judgment equally inevitable. But *the man who at the same moment that he adores, perceives that his adoration is perceived and is acceptable, has already begun an inter-*

*course with God.* Two moral beings cannot come into such intercourse, without the commencement of a new moral relation; not, though the inequality between them be infinite. Nor does it avail to dwell on our littleness as any objection: the chasm is still infinite, between the *highest* creature and the Creator. But in fact, this infinite disparity is just the thing essential to the relation and characteristic of it.—And so much on this subject.

## § 2. *Loves of the Soul.*

Human characters have often been distributed into two great classes, which may be called *masculine* and *feminine*. In the masculine, are stronger and coarser passions, self-confidence somewhat overbearing, more promptitude to act and more unflagging energy, deeper conscience and more prominence of the idea of Duty, high ambition to achieve Right; warm and rich love, of gushing impetuosity. In the feminine, are pure and gentle instincts; strength more passive than active; slowness to act, except when affection moves; a heart that guides to Duty and to Right, but thinking of it not as Duty and as Right but as that which is Lovely; finally, a love which is tender, transparent and steady. Of course there may be intermediate characters. Yet if we contrast the two more concisely, thus: the *former*, (partly from ambition and partly from the activity of the Conscience,) is impelled to action before the affections are fully ready for it: the *latter* is little moved by a sense of Duty, and is satisfied not to



act until impelled by affection :—then the two characters exclude one another. And this is perhaps a view suitable to our present purpose.

Where Conscience predominates, there the struggles described in the last Part may be apprehended ; especially if to this be added an ardent ambitious nature. Exactly in such natures other passions also are apt to be strong : hence the man is a bundle of forces not yet in harmony : and the harmonizing of them is probably attempted by direct conflict, before Love comes in to reconcile them. The more feminine character probably avoids struggle, not by any strength of love, but by the unformed state of the conscience and delicacy of the passions : for powerful love to God can in very rare instances be developed so early as to anticipate conflict. Many persons of masculine soul, nevertheless by severe sorrows, especially from the deaths of those whom they love, are in great measure moulded into the feminine type ; and possibly this is the most perfect character. But at present I confine myself to the other.

There are those, of amiable natures and soft affections, perhaps also very susceptible to natural beauty, who appear to approach religion altogether on its sunny side. They see God, not as a strict Judge, not as a Glorious Potentate ; but as the animating Spirit of a beautiful harmonious world, Beneficent and Kind, Merciful as well as Pure. The same characters generally have no metaphysical tendencies : they do not look back into themselves.

Hence they are not distressed by their own imperfections: yet it would be absurd to call them self-righteous; for they hardly think of themselves *at all*. This childlike quality of their nature makes the opening of religion very happy to them: for they no more shrink from God, than a child from an emperor before whom the parent trembles: in fact, they have no vivid conception of *any* of the qualities in which the severer Majesty of God consists. He is to them the impersonation of Kindness and Beauty. They read his character, not in the disordered moral world of man, but in romantic and harmonious nature. Of human sin they know perhaps little in their own hearts and not very much in the world; and human suffering does but melt them to tenderness. Thus, when they approach God, no inward disturbance ensues; and without being as yet spiritual, they have a certain complacency and perhaps romantic sense of excitement in their simple worship.

It is not by a lucky accident that their early course is so tranquil. It arises out of the fact that their crude views of God are really more true than those of the opposite character. He is *not* a stern Judge, exacting every tittle of some law from us. There is *nothing* in Him to terrify the simple-minded. He does *not* act towards us (spiritually) by generalizations which may omit our individual case, but his perfection consists in dealing with each case by itself as if there were no others. In short only the primitive ruder notion concerning

F

Him is the stern one ; that of the riper spirituality testifies to his infinite Love. Now it deserves remark, that, quite in accordance with this, women come more easily to pure religion than men. In fact, men are accustomed to deal with affairs of life on a great scale, where (by reason of *our* mental infirmity) fixed general rules are essential : hence come men's notions of abstract Justice, in which the Judge is forced to sacrifice his personal feelings to some law *external to himself* ; an idea which they erroneously transfer to God. But women act in detail, and judge of each case for itself and by their own feelings. So again ; all moral rules are a generalization ; hence Conscience, which bids us observe such rules, implies generalization : but women do not generalize much ; they rather seize on particulars. Therefore they are less liable to be tormented by a Conscience, which (on some abstract principle) lays more on them than their affections can bear. But chiefly, it is important, that men deal much with their equals, and have to stand out for their rights ; hence the sharpness with which the idea of Justice and Right is stamped upon them. But women are chiefly concerned with unequals ; with a husband above them and children beneath them ; and in younger age of course equally so. Thus affectionate obedience and tender mercy are prominent with them ; and they carry these sentiments into their religious relations. Moreover as young women are not subject to passion in the same coarse forms as young men, their temptations are

probably weaker, they wound their own consciences less, and their religious course is far smoother. On the whole, we may well admire the instinct, which made the old Germans regard Woman as penetrating nearer to the mind of God than Man does.

That none can enter the kingdom of heaven without becoming *a little Child*,—guileless and simple-minded,—is a sentiment long well known. But behind and after this there is a mystery, revealed to but few, which thou, Oh Reader, must take to heart. Namely, if thy Soul is to go on into higher spiritual blessedness, it must become a *Woman*; yes, however manly thou be among men. It must learn to love being dependent; and must lean on God not solely from distress or alarm, *but because it does not like independence or solitude*. It must not have recourse to Him merely as a friend in need, under the strain of duty, the battering of affliction and the failure of human sympathy; but it must press towards Him when there is *no* need. It must love to pour out its thoughts to Him, for the pleasure of pouring them out. It must utterly abandon the idea of having either *Rights or Liberty* as against God, and will then instinctively know that God claims no Rights against it, but in all his direct dealings with it is thinking solely of its individual welfare, as much as if it were the only creature in the universe. Though all the Scribes and Pharisees should assert it, believe not, Oh Reader, that God keeps any spiritual scores against thee. It was a strong-minded man, deeply versed in human

nature, but as painfully dark concerning the Divine, who said: *The gods care to avenge, but care not to save* \*. Those were Pagan and external gods. But our inward and spiritual God *cares not to avenge, and cares only to save*: and to err concerning this, would make us less holy, as well as less happy. Farther, the soul must learn *to follow her own instincts more*; to deal with every case for itself, and enact no artificial generalizations; to think, not what she *may* do without sin, but what best harmonizes with her own delicacies; so that the law of the Spirit within her may set her free from, by raising her above, the law of sin and of death. Lastly, she must change that Jewish precept, "Thou *shalt* love the Lord" into another: "Thou *mayst* love thy Lord."

But those gentle souls which are drawn so quietly towards God, by no means go without their share of sorrow, only it seems to take a different form. It is not that an evil conscience goads them, that Duty works them hard, and their Affections fail: but they doubt whether they may suppose that there is *any definite relation at all* between them and the Infinite God. God is hitherto to the soul as a pleasing poetical dream: He has not (as in the case described in the Second Part) been felt in the Conscience, first as one painfully judging the heart, and then as subduing it; and He is in fact still a mere external God to the worshipper. While this is the

\* Tacitus, *Histor.* i. 3.

case, there is Sentiment, but not as yet Spirituality ; and though the religion is not formal and stiff, but poetical and free, still the soul can have no active life. But from this very circumstance a sense of *vacuity* arises. One who begins to realize God's majestic beauty and eternity, and feels in contrast how little and transitory man is, how dependent and feeble,—longs to lean upon him for support. But He is *outside* of the heart, like a beautiful sunset, and seems to have nothing to do with it ; there is no getting into contact with Him, to press against Him.—Yet where rather should the weak rest than on the Strong, the creature of a day than on the Eternal, the imperfect than on the centre of Perfection ? And where else should God dwell than *in* the human heart ? for if God is in the universe, among things inanimate and unmoral, how much more ought He to dwell with our souls ? and they too seem to be infinite in their cravings : who but He can satisfy them ? Thus a restless instinct agitates the soul, guiding it dimly to feel, that it was made for some definite but unknown relation towards God. The sense of emptiness increases to positive uneasiness, until there is an inward yearning, if not shaped in words, yet in substance not alien from that ancient strain,—“As the hart panteth after the water-brooks, so panteth my soul after Thee, Oh God : my soul is athirst for God, even for the living God.”—“I wait for the Lord ; my soul doth wait ; as those that watch for the morning.” But, by the continuance of such exercises,

the fervency of desire gradually ripens into love, and love goes on heightening till at last the soul becomes conscious of it: and then the crisis is reached. *I believe* at least that the transition depends on the following principle:—no soul can possibly know that it loves God, and not at once infer (whether aware or not of the mental process) that God loved it first\*: so powerful and clear is the direct perception that all our highest and best feelings are shadows of His: if therefore *we*, imperfect and puny, in truth love *Him* who is unseen and dimly known, how much more does *He*, who cannot overlook us, assuredly love *us*;—not indeed because we deserve it, but because it is part of His own nature's perfection.

In claiming a *personal* relation with God, nothing *exclusive* is intended; nay, he who thus learns that he is loved by God, learns simultaneously that all other men and creatures are also loved: (though a hateful dogma may here cripple his soul's instinct.) That is an important lesson for the man's external action; nay, is a foundation of universal love in the soul; but its inward movements towards God proceed exactly as if there were no other creature beside itself in the universe. Thus the discovery that *it loves and is loved in turn* produces sensible Joy; in some natures very powerful, in all imparting cheerfulness, elasticity, hope, vivacity, sereneness.

\* In Creeds, this practical and blessed truth assumes the vexatious form of a logical, or rather illogical, doctrine, called Preventive Grace.

The personal relation sought, is discerned and felt. The Soul understands and knows that God is *her* God; dwelling with her more closely than any creature can; yea, neither Stars, nor Sea, nor smiling Nature hold God so intimately as the bosom of the Soul. What is He to it? what, but the Soul of the soul? It no longer seems profane to say, "God is my bosom friend: God is for me, and I am for Him." So Joy bursts out into Praise, and all things look brilliant; and hardship seems easy, and duty becomes delight, and contempt is not felt, and every morsel of bread is sweet. Then, though we know that the physical Universe has fixed unaltering laws, we *cannot help* seeing God's hand in events. Whatever happens, we think of as his Mercies, his Kindnesses; or his Visitations and his Chastisements; everything comes to us from his Love:—and this may be very illogical, (and *possibly* may be a mere illusion,) yet we should do such violence to the soul's instinct in *not* thus thinking, that we follow it unreasoningly, and leave others to reconcile the paradox. Thus the whole world is fresh to us with sweetness before untasted. All things are ours, whether affliction or pleasure, health or pain. Old things are passed away; behold! all things are become new: and the soul wonders, and admires, and gives thanks, and exults like the child on a summer's day;—and understands, that she *is* as a new-born child: she has undergone a New Birth! It is not birth after the flesh, but a birth of the Spirit, birth into a heavenly union, birth into the family of God.



Why need she scruple to say, that she is "partaker of the divine nature," if God loves her and dwells in her bosom ?

Reader, accept these mystical metaphors as such. Behold in them the soul labouring to express her feelings ; but presume not to freeze them into logical terms, or they will become, *the letter that killeth*.

But Oh philosopher, is all this a contemptible dream ? thou canst explain it all ? or thou scornest it all ? Whatever *theory* thou mayst form concerning it, it is not the less a fact of human nature : one of some age too : for David thirsted after God and exceedingly rejoiced in Him, and so did Paul ; and the feelings which they describe are reproduced in the present day. To despise wide-spread enduring facts is *not* philosophic ; and when they conduce to power of goodness and inward happiness, it might be wise to learn the phenomena by personal experience, *before* theorizing about them. It was not a proud thing of Paul to say, but a simple truth, that the spiritual cannot be judged by the unspiritual.

The single thought, "God is for my soul, and my soul is for Him," suffices to fill a universe of feeling, and gives rise to a hundred metaphors. Spiritual persons have exhausted human relationships in the vain attempt to express their full feeling of what God (or Christ) is to them. Father, Brother, Friend, King, Master, Shepherd, Guide, are common titles. In other figures, God is their Tower, their Glory, their Rock, their Shield, their Sun, their Star, their Joy, their Portion, their Hope,

their Trust, their Life. But what has been said, will show why a still tenderer tie has ordinarily presented itself to the Christian imagination as a more appropriate metaphor, — that of Marriage. The habit of breathing to God our most secret hopes, sorrows, complaints and wishes, in unheard whisper, with the consciousness that He is always inseparable from our being, perhaps pressed this comparison forward. Yet there are other still more marked phenomena, acting in the same direction, which will need to be presently analyzed.

At the same time it may deserve remark, that in pre-Christian times another metaphor shows itself, which however, if now new, would scarcely give less offence to the uninitiated: namely, the Hebrew Psalmist conceived of his soul as God's only and pet child; in Hebrew *yachida*, which the Alexandrian version represents by τὸν μονογενῆ σου, "Thy only begotten one," and our English by "thy darling." While the English excellently gives the spirit of the original, it drops its startling exclusiveness. Yet the form of expression is not uninstructional, as manifesting how (owing to the feebleness of the human imagination?) the Soul, feeling her relation to God to be just *as if* other creatures did not exist, accommodates language to that hypothesis; and yet the intellect is not for one moment imposed on by such an illusion.—The Hebrew prophets, especially of the later school, habitually represent the relation of the Israelitish *Church* collectively

to Jehovah, as that of a wife to a husband ; but this does not seem to be applied to *individuals* \*.

Thus an important beginning is made of that process, by which all the passions of human nature are to be harmonized and glorified. Indeed, where the phenomena are marked, for the time it might seem as if the secondary principles were swallowed up and lost : for even Conscience fails to operate as such ; the words Duty and Virtue become distasteful, and Merit exceedingly odious. Now this is angelic, so long as all Duties are notwithstanding performed ; for to act from love to God and from the new instincts of the Soul is far better than to act from a sense of Duty, which is apt to be a dry and external thing. Yet there is here a danger, in regard to that class of Duties which are *ordinarily* performed by affection, and are no mere external thing,—chiefly those among blood relations : for the domestic affections are sometimes absorbed and starved, not ennobled, by the new affection ; and this is a great calamity. Young persons especially are put *out of relation* to their parents, brothers and sisters by their change : for they find a new prompter to action, which supersedes former con-

\* The metaphor was adopted by Paul, who makes the *Church* the bride of Christ : (so the Apocalypse :) yet he first set the example of concentrating the similitude on parts of the Church : " I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy, that I may present you as a pure virgin to Christ." When the visible Church became a huge mass of Paganism, clearer room was left for the individual to claim the metaphor.

ventional rules; and they do not conceal that they feel themselves wiser than their elders. Or if they do, still it is hard for them to behave with the same sort of deference as before. In many old ways the new life is cramped and uneasy, and demands enlargement; and slight breaches of the delicacy of domestic relation are made, which are difficult to repair. While thus Habit and Domestic Affection, the two most strengthening and purifying springs of common virtue, receive some little shock, many smaller duties are apt to suffer, unless the new principle is wonderfully energetic and the Soul follows its own instincts most faithfully, without derangement from men's false theories which meet it. But this is seldom possible; and in many cases one part of the moral conduct becomes less amiable than before, for reasons which are now to be detailed.

A slight sketch was drawn, at the end of the First Part, of those rudimentary but honest worshippers, who feel sincere reverence towards God, and are kept by that reverence at a certain distance from moral evil, although religion is to them rather a negative than a positive thing. The religion of such having no powerful inward spring, is very much influenced by external circumstances; as, first of all, by the national morality; and this again, by political institutions. Nor only so, but it is affected by the quality of the spiritual (or it may be poetical or fanatical) tendencies, which are in contact with it, but do not pervade it. Perhaps it becomes worst, when it has no such external anta-

gonist at all: which was the case in Judæa, after Prophecy and Poetry had sunk, while no culture of Fine Art existed, where Enthusiasm was shut up in convents, and Priests possessed the political government. Hence the religion became a dead, formal and often hypocritical routine, more offensive than Paganism, for the very reason that Paganism makes no professions of a holy God and a moral worship.—But that which thus appeared as Pharisaism in Judæa, became in Greece Stoicism, where Imaginative Culture relieved the deadness of the atmosphere: and the noble Hymn to Jupiter, composed by the Stoic Cleanthes, shows us that there was a true heart in Stoicism. In Rome, side by side with rising Christianity, Stoicism improved still more: and that excellent emperor Marcus Antoninus exhibits it to us in the height of gentleness as well as of self-sacrificing conscientiousness.—In modern England, the political institutions and the diffusion of considerable spiritual light, have in the same way acted from without upon the Stoics of our day; and unless we resolve to blind our own eyes, we shall see around us persons of great worth, whose character I may sketch as follows.

Conscience in them takes the lead of the conduct, and they are capable of the greatest sacrifices at the call of Duty. They discern intellectually all the moral perfections of God, and sincerely revere Him. The thought of his all-seeing Eye braces them against temptation, nor are any more trustworthy persons to be found for all the ordinary outward

duties of life. Yet their religion is not a very inward one. They rather know with the mind, than feel with the soul, that God searches their hearts: as may be inferred from their not understanding inward conflicts. They are, probably, generally persons of a strong Will, moderate Passions, or very well trained from childhood. While they are mild towards the unselfishly irreligious, and show towards penitent offenders a feeling which, though not tender, is considerate, they are exceedingly keen critics of all professors of spirituality, and cannot make allowance for errors of impulse and neglect in such. They have evidently a good conscience before God, and they lean upon Him in times of trial, but probably do not seek to Him for pleasure at other times. They do not press passionately after Him, but rather suspect all such things as delusion. That there is no vivid and satisfying sense of His presence, is known by the liking which they show for outward distinctions, and many artificial pleasures, as also by their regard for fashion and for the world's opinion in trifles: yet they have strength of mind to rise above these things, whenever clear duty calls. They act "upon *principle*," that is, upon rules capable of being expressed in words; and seldom think it wise to follow the instinct of the soul, even so far as to hear *this* instead of *that* preacher. In short, the Will is strong in them, the Moral Faculties are sound, Reverence is unfeigned, yet the Soul is weak and inactive; there is no want of peace, because there is no keen sensitiveness as

to Sin or high aspiration; but Joy cannot exist, because there is no passionateness in the soul.

Now between such a character and a soul which has suddenly come into new and vehement life, there is some natural repulsion: and they may often be actually members of the same domestic circle. Each sees the other's defects. The one appears to be stiff, dry, pharisaic, and certainly unregenerate; the other to be self-pleasing, uncontrolled, incapable of conscientious sacrifice, one-sided in moral conduct, self-confident and very presumptuous. The former, having little or no consciousness of spiritual *instinct*, gathers, with mingled indignation and concern, that the latter believes himself guided by the Spirit of God within his heart\*. The discovery of this excites alarm, similar to that which a hen feels, whose ducklings are venturing on an element which would be fatal to *her*; and gloomy presages occur, on remembering all the sins and inconsistencies which are real or reported concerning professors of

\* A consciousness of this *new* instinct has in every age led spiritual men (Jews or Christians) to speak of it as God in them, Christ in them, the Spirit in them. It is felt as something *superadded* to their old nature, and to contest whether their phraseology is logically accurate, appears to be useless, unless we can first know what is the essence of God and what the essence of Instinct. St. Paul alternately speaks as if this new Spirit *were* and *were not* himself: generally he sharply contrasts them. This Spirit is, in his view, the SEAL by which God's children know themselves to be His. Perhaps it is not quite superfluous to add, that no man can without absurdity adduce the inward movements of his own Spirit as an argument to another, or as any justification of conduct which needs to be justified.

spirituality. But self-confidence, as a universal imputation against them, though plausible, is untrue ; for the young and new-born soul is so conscious of ignorance, as to lean even unduly on the judgments and advice of the more experienced, in whom it discerns congeniality. Yet what do these teachers do, to aid it in avoiding injurious collision and unjust sentiment ? They steep it in bigotry and superciliousness. They identify the *unregenerate* with the *ungodly*, and teach that these are under the wrath of God and on their way to everlasting misery. So the young soul, which confidingly drinks in their instruction, learns to look on conscientious and devout worshippers as under God's anger and condemnation ! This is to poison spiritual sentiment in its opening life ; and words will not adequately express the amount of evil caused by it.—There is indeed an opposite school who see this, but are very unhappy in their remedy : namely, they sanction the dogma, that “ the unregenerate are ungodly,” but proceed to ignore the whole momentous reality of the New Birth, by identifying it with a magical process effected by sprinkling water on an infant ! and then, forsooth, justify this by quoting certain figures of bold rhetoric from the New Testament. Between such immoral bigotry on the one hand, and such dead mechanism on the other, it may seem difficult to choose : but nothing in God's real world confines us to the alternative.

God has two families of children on this earth ; *the once born* and *the twice born* ; both obedient,



both reverential, both imperfect, each essential to the other. Let neither despise the other, but let each learn his own weakness, and the other's strength. To those who were religious, but not spiritual, we above applied the words: "We have a little sister, and she has no breasts": but behold; the little sister is grown up, and she still has no breasts, for she is a Man! And this opens to us the relation of the two classes, in their present development. We see in them the Man-soul and the Woman-soul, that which thinks and that which feels, the negative and the positive, the formal and the instinctive, the principle of conservatism and the principle of progress: in the one the Conscience, in the other the Affection takes the lead; yet one without the other could never be made perfect. How the more formal and rigid has been improved by contact with the more poetical and affectionate, has been already noticed; but conversely, it is equally certain that wild fanaticism has resulted and may result again, where the passions of the men of Soul are not affected from without by the moral influences of the men of Conscience. It is by their mutual action that God has provided for the growing up of human nature into a capacity or predisposition for true religion. Hence the schism between the two characters is far less in modern Europe than it was in antiquity; and each individual of us must look to blend more and more the excellencies of both. Not that it seems for a moment doubtful, which of the two has the higher order

of religion; in fact, they are fundamentally related as Law and Gospel, and in some respects as Priest and Prophet: *but a novice in the latter may be less trustworthy, though of greater promise, than a veteran in the former*: and although it is inevitable that one of the new born, while the feelings are all fresh, will discover who *are* and who *are not* congenial, he needs not to despise the latter. The two forms of character are as parallel streams, neither of which can stop,—nor their distinctions be wholly obliterated,—until, blending gradually, they become One in the bosom of God; who is neither male nor female, but feminine in soul and masculine in action; so that the old Orphic hymn was not far wrong in saying,

Ζεὺς ἄρσεν γένετο, Ζεὺς ἀμβροτος ἔπαιτο νύμφη,  
Jove was a male, and Jove was an immortal damsel.

So also should we translate the old heathen maxim, *suaviter in modo, fortiter in re*, into, *tender in heart and firm in action*. Moreover, it is to be calculated that if the new life proceed happily, it will as a thing of course at length take up into itself all the steadiness of the opposite character. On the contrary, it is not easy for the developed *Legal* religionist to superadd the *Gospel* qualities, except either by domestic afflictions and other sufferings which deeply probe the heart, or by conflicts such as were described in the Second Part: yet no one can say what might be effected, if a deeper and wiser teaching on these topics abounded among

us.—After this digression, we return to the case of the new-born soul.

If such evils as have been alluded to,—presumption and superciliousness, and their unlovely despiritualizing results,—be avoided, nevertheless the lapse of no long time brings to light certain defects in this state of inexperience. Perhaps indeed the soul has not as yet at all learned to look on God as *the source* whence its life is to come, and is simply living on its own affections. So long as its addresses to Him abound with unforced outpouring of love and joy, all seems to go well ; but when the affections become exhausted, the sense of His love seems to vanish with them, and discomfort ensues. This circumstance alone must ensure a new set of actions in the soul, directed to give stability to the affections : but it perhaps commonly happens that several causes combine in setting it to the difficult practical problem,—how to keep the affections lively, and how to recover them when lost. Let us think for a moment how this problem is related to the other,—of winning and keeping Peace.

It appeared that the Will and the Affections are the two parts of man which have to be perfected according to the will of God. As soon as the Will is conformed to God, Peace comes of itself. If the Will have gone astray, there is only one cure, but that is a sure and speedy one,—an immediate laying bare of the heart to God, by which the evil Will is expelled ; then Peace is regained, as soon as the path of duty can be recovered. But farther ; the utility (so

to say) of Peace, is, to enable us to come into so close contact with God's Spirit, as to have our Affections acted on by Him. Now if there has been no marked flagging in them, no difficulty may be incurred. But nothing is more common than for persons not to know that worldly occupations, especially mental distraction, must needs unstring the spiritual affections; and then they are apt to be severe on themselves, when they find it out. Most have to learn by their own errors and sufferings, and at last discover with some surprise what was meant by *the prayer of Faith*. He whose faith is well rooted, if he detects himself to be dull, unthankful and cold, instead of losing his energies in self-reproach, can at once cry in confidence and self-despair: "My flesh, O Lord, is weak, but my spirit is willing: my heart is barren and dry, but Thine is an ever flowing fountain: I am cold and starved, but Thou art an eternal Sun: *Thou wilt* melt me into new love, and kindle me into holier life than before." One who in very earnest so calls to God, recovers in one half minute all that had been lost: but the power of so doing is one of the things most to be coveted, and, I imagine, hardest to attain; because it presupposes a confidence, *settled in the intellect, and yet a practical one*, of God's unchangeable and active love to us. At any rate, it is a "Faith that worketh by Love"; for no one can exercise it without a *true* love to God, though that love may be so *weak*, that the person is unconscious of it. Our sense of his love (we said) was primitively ex-

cited by our own affections to Him, and therefore it is apt to vanish when they wear out : thus we might seem to run round in a circle, when we are to get back our Affections by the exercise of Faith, when Faith implies his Love, and His Love is only known to us through our own Affections. But this is not quite correct. Faith does not imply any *sensible feeling* of God's Love, such as would produce present joy ; but the remembrances of the past suffice to stimulate it ; hence it strengthens with time and experience.

In many cases there is a new crisis in the religious life brought about by the pressure of temptation. It is not here requisite to insist anew on the mortal antagonism between immoral will and spiritual aspiration, or to suggest the numerous causes which may lead to severe assaults of temptation, when the "First Love" of the soul has drooped. The forms of trial must differ exceedingly in every two persons. If the old habits were bad, but were swept away by the new flood of life, the soul perhaps thought they were gone for ever ; but as soon as the tide ebbs, they seek to return. Not to consider the melancholy, but perhaps common case, where relapses into wilful sin have deeply wounded the spirit ; no sooner have the affections towards God decayed, than a man finds himself as it were on the brink of a precipice, where his head swims and his soul turns sick. Or again, the conscience has become more sensitive, during the period that the affections were powerfully excited ; and inward

evils begin to be discovered to an amount before unsuspected. The man *has become self-reflecting*; and may be plunged into a struggle similar to that of the preceding Part, though modified by his remembrances of the past. Or thirdly, totally new dangers may have grown up by lapse of time, change of circumstances, the developement of new passions, nay, and even by the action of the new life itself, in conjunction with erroneous theories. Whatever the series of causes, a horror oppresses him, lest, after tasting the sweetness and glories of a higher, he should fall back into a baser, life: and it is probable that some conflict of this kind, *more or less* severe, is essential to give tenderness of Conscience to one who at first was drawn only by Sentiment. However pure and sound this sentiment may seem, it is likely to be at first unequal in its action and too unmixed with religious fear. In a soul of this character, as was observed, the Majesty of God and all his more overwhelming attributes are kept exceedingly in the background: He is loved only as the impersonation of Beauty and Purity, Kindness and Mercy, and is felt to be as it were the Soul of the soul. Too little sense of the infinite inequality of God and his creature, perhaps here operates: and it is wholesome for such a one *now* to be made to tremble for fear of forfeiting his favour. The alarm and anxiety however have nothing slavish in them: sin is dreaded, not because of apprehended punishment, but because it will grieve the Spirit of God, and shut out the light of His countenance: and by

these distresses the soul is to learn to shun sensitively any near approach of sin, and never to trifle with it, or think any thing light. In some cases the distress becomes very lively; and half instructed persons are apt to fancy that they have committed "the unpardonable sin;" or that they are those into whom Seven devils have come, for the One which was cast out. Out of all these agitations grows a new form of desire, viz. to secure *the permanence* of that union with God which has already commenced: that is to say, the soul is no longer satisfied with *present* good, but is solicitous also for the *future*. This implies a developement of thoughtfulness and self-distrust, in a sense that it cannot depend upon its own affections, but must look to God as the great source whence life and power are to originate: now then probably Prayer commences with an intensity before unknown, while the songs of Praise and Joy are dumb. By such exercises, what was defective in the former view of God gets corrected, and a habit is formed of prayer against temptation the moment it approaches: a habit which could hardly exist, while the soul was deficient in self-reflection and self-knowledge.

How long this crisis may last and in what way the result may be evolved, is very various, and in part it may be affected by doctrinal theories; nay, the mind may be led off into critical discussions about the "Final Perseverance of the Saints." But no proposition that needs to be authoritatively guaranteed ever supplies a spiritual want; and it does

not appear in practice that that doctrine is by any means essential to comfort. That eminent saint, Fletcher of Madeley, was as well without it, as his opponent Whitfield with it. Although traditional theories greatly obscure this part of the subject, it appears to me that the following statement is fundamentally accurate.—A person who vehemently desires and prays for a particular object, is in the intervals necessarily much engaged in asking himself, whether he is praying for that which God can properly give. When therefore what had at first been cries of distress, perhaps from a faithless and double mind, become genuine and fixed desires; when crude yearnings for—he hardly knew what, clear up into distinct petitions which can be afterwards meditated on; the soul wakes at length into a full self-consciousness that *it is wanting nothing, except exactly that, which of all things it is certain that God must rejoice to grant*; viz. that it may never break away from His love. As soon as this is intellectually discerned, if earnest desire is at the same time acting, anxiety and fear fall away of themselves. The man is, in fact, hungering and thirsting for righteousness, and he has now found out that he is: it is then not to be wondered at, (much less to be derided as vain,) if he unhesitatingly believes that God will supply all his need, will keep him from falling, and will preserve him faithful to the end. He now may, or he may not, frame out of his experience a general proposition about the “Final Perseverance of the Saints;” but no such proposi-



tion is wanted, while his heart is in harmony with God; none does him good, while he is perverse or double-minded.

Those in whom these phenomena have been sharply marked, so as to make a new crisis of the life, seem instinctively to compare the process which they thus undergo to a Spiritual Marriage. We have seen the longings of the soul to convert God's transitory visits into an abiding union, and how it is eager above all things to make this union *indissoluble*. On getting a clear perception that it is asking that which He delights to grant, it believes that its prayer is answered: so it makes a covenant with God and pledges itself to Him, well-assured that He accepts the pledge. "Not now only, Oh my Lord," it exclaims, "but henceforth and always, Thou art mine and I am Thine. I have known somewhat of Thy gloriousness and loveliness: I have loved Thee a little: this heart has been Thy dwelling-place: now do I claim that my Lord shall never go away, but dwell here inseparably, eternally."—It is therefore very far indeed from a gratuitous phantasy, to speak of this as a marriage of the soul to God: no other metaphor in fact will express the thing; and it is hard to think that any can have experienced it and not feel the suitability of the phrase, though (for fear of casting pearls before swine) one must ordinarily avoid every allusion to what is not only a sacred but a momentous transaction. Momentous: for even the intellectual remembrance of such vows, such pledges, such joys,

such hopes,—gives to the soul immense power of recovering its affections, when lost as they must be continually lost, if only by the wear and tear of the world. At the same time I am not defending the language of human loves, in the extent to which grave and pure-minded persons have often here applied it.

Yet the strongly marked analogies between the Soul's love to God, and that borne by a woman to her husband, is in several ways instructive and even suggestive. It gives the solution to various anomalies. Many utterances of passion are right, healthy and amiable in secret, which, when exhibited before the cold-minded, seem only ridiculous; not but that, if one could condescend to the task, rapturous love might be defended even to a utilitarian. And this is the reply to those, who sneer at what they think (in religion) to be moping fancies, self-invented sorrows and empty joys. When spiritual life first gushes out fresh and powerful, it may possibly be turbulent and irregular, like the mountain torrent or like the early affection of lovers; but in its later course its tendency (when happily guided) is to become tranquil and even-flowing, fertilizing to those who know not its source. Who would get rid of the noisy brook, at the expense of losing the noble river? Who that knows the ever-fresh delights of long-wedded love, thinks them dearly bought by the alarms and sorrows and palpitations and jealousies and undue absorption of the mind in courtship?

G

In reply to those who despise all inward experiences as simple delusion, it would be a sufficient defensive argument to say, that love to God is as respectable a passion as love for the Fine Arts: but the surpassing magnitude of the moral consequences justifies us *theoretically* in assuming a much higher tone; and the only thing that *practically* is apt to put to shame and stop the mouth of its advocate, is, the deplorable bigotry (of word, if not of feeling,) in which none indulge so much, as those who speak earnestly concerning the love of God. When it appears, that they not only regard themselves as Heaven's sole concern, but count a doctrine to be *good news*, which simultaneously proclaims everlasting Glory to them, and everlasting, ever-torturing Sin to the vast majority of the human race,—the common heart of the world boils up with horror at the apparent intensity of selfishness in those, in whom Self ought to be swallowed up by divine Love. When upon this comes an anathema against all, who differ from them on intellectual questions, men turn away in despair superadded to disgust. Such bigotry is the real cause why the boar out of the wood lays waste God's vineyard, and the heathen have cast down its walls;—bigotry, inexcusable by the plea of "submitting the understanding to the Scripture." For *if this be* Scripture doctrine, (—I waive the question of interpretation—,) then it is a wicked thing to submit their understandings to it: the moral sense and conscience ought to revolt against it, as against any other heathenism. It ought to show them that

the book is not immaculate, and to drive them to the teachings of God's Spirit. In fact, however, I believe, this evil side of their doctrine is brought out only now and then, to do mischief in controversy; but commonly lies buried in dust in a corner of the intellect: it would therefore be unjust to impute to individuals the selfishness inherent in their theoretic creed.

Let the philosophical moralist farther be assured, that the more enlightened minds among spiritual Christians disbelieve the most outrageous part of this traditional doctrine; though laymen have no voice to say so, and priests are generally too timid. It is not just in him to be thus repelled; and by it he cripples his own science. Morals can seldom gain living energy, without the impulsive force derived from Spirituals. Plato and Cicero may indeed talk of the surpassing beauty of Virtue; nor do we doubt that, a man's own *self-respect* may make him choose to die, rather than live degraded in his own eyes by deviating from his ideal of right conduct: let earnest Stoicism be confessed to be noble and honourable; yet it makes the mind too exclusively reflexive, and endangers pride and self-confidence. Virtue is an abstraction, a set of wise rules, not a person; and cannot call out affection, as an existence exterior to the soul, does. On the contrary, God is a *Person*; and the love of Him is of all affections by far the most energetic in exciting us to realize our highest ideal of moral excellence, and in clearing the moral sight, so that that ideal

may keep rising. *Other things being equal*, (a condition not to be forgotten,) a spiritual man will hold a higher and purer morality than a mere moralist. Not only does duty manifest itself to him as an ever-expanding principle, but,—since a larger and larger part of Duty becomes pleasant and easy, when performed under the stimulus of Love,—the Will is enabled to concentrate itself more on that which remains difficult, and greater power of performance is attained. Hence, “what the Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh,” is “fulfilled in those, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.” In nothing perhaps is this more intelligibly exhibited, than in the sweet spirit of loving resignation, with which hundreds and thousands of obscure Christians have endured long sickness and excruciating pain; while mere Stoicism with difficulty obtains from the strongest minds more than the suppression of unmanly lamentations, and is forced, alas! to leave suffering unsoftened by a sense of superior Love.

But is it to be hoped, that one who has attained the happy belief of his permanent spiritual union with the Father of spirits, will retain his happiness and his strength unabated? that his conflicts are passed once for all, and that it is constantly a heaven on earth which he will thenceforth live? No one has a right to say of his brother that it may not be thus; but we see very many causes which make it hard to be thus. All probably are summed up in Frailty and in Ignorance; and of these two

the latter at least seems to be at present inevitable. For now no concord is discernible in those who ought to advise or direct; and inexperience generally has to learn by its own failures, if exposed to circumstances which require wisdom. Let us suppose that there is no Frailty to be blamed: that the heart remains brave to duty and ever faithful to God; still, in the complicated affairs of life, it is often most difficult to ascertain *what is* our duty. So many principles of action are established in the world as absolutely right which are not wholly right; so often does acquiescence in that which society demands or expects, clash or seem to clash with that which the spiritual instinct suggests; especially, in dealings with others, so hard is it to know where obedience and deference must end, and resistance begin; where mercy will be weakness, and severity is essential; where we must yield up our rights, and where we must contend for them;—that even the coolest mind, and the best furnished with information and experience, must often doubt. But in fact, men frequently have not time for cool and full deliberation. In the press and hurry of life they are forced to act first and think afterwards. Moreover we do not foresee the after-results of innocent and well-meant actions, but first get entangled in perplexing positions. Now, since to act without a clear conscience involves us in a sense of sin, what can happen, if we are forced to act, and yet are unable to decide which of several paths is the right? In theory it may be replied, that a man who does

what on the whole seems to him best, or least bad, ought not to reproach himself: but in reality when the conscience is dim and doubtful, men are apt not to know whether or not they have been faithful to their light. For these reasons, increasing wisdom is probably always as essential to permanent peace of conscience, as it manifestly is to profitable action.

But we are far too favourable to human nature, in excluding the hypothesis of Frailty. However powerful may have been the convictions of spiritual truth, however vivid the impressions, yet it is hard for new impulses to wage war against old habits or against the insensible tendencies of the common nature; and every special temperament has its own weak side. If no strong blasts of passion carry the soul away, or if no cankering worldliness undermine its powers, yet perhaps a time and place comes, where it cannot follow its convictions of duty without a sacrifice which it has not strength to incur. Sophistry is then brought in, to prove that no such sacrifice is really demanded. The heart thus loses its simplicity, and languor and self-justification go hand in hand. Many are the possibilities of this sort;—God only knows them;—so many, that it may seem to be almost superhuman happiness to avoid them all. Nay, there seem to be grievous cases,—though it is always hard to judge whether a man exaggerates his own vileness,—in which, after “tasting the heavenly gift,” a very awful hardness of heart has been incurred. In the retrospect of such matters, every one so loathes his past self, as to lose calm-

ness of judgment and the power of measuring his language: hence, where no specific facts are alleged, great deductions should be made from all that a man states against himself. Paul calls himself the chief of sinners: he wrote it sincerely: but who of us takes him at his word? As far as I am aware, the most shocking narratives of this sort are those of persons who after many spiritual experiences have fallen into religious unbelief, and, as a result of that, have been carried away by their old sins: but to understand such cases is most difficult, from our not knowing distinctly enough what had been their *intellectual* basis of faith: if it was an erroneous one, we must pity and cannot much wonder at them. Where despotic power removes the human checks on selfish indulgence and multiplies occasions of dreadful sin, as with a king David or a Cromwell, danger seems to reach its maximum: yet our confidence in the soul's power of recovery (with whatever amount of intense suffering) from the deadliest falls, is certainly not weakened by the distressing history of the former. Indeed generally, though hurricanes of passion should have blown off the buds of religion's early spring, yet if no selfish injustice has sapped the vital susceptibilities of the soul, it is never too late to hope for a restoration both sudden and final. The "backslider" (as many scripturalists call him) is inwardly self-condemned: self-despising and self-hating, he continues in his sinful state through despair only. But on some favoured day he all at once remembers "the joy of



his espousals;" and the thought gushes into his heart, that God once loved him, although fore-knowing all his vileness. He meets the eye of the Almighty, and knows that it is an eye of Love:—let no pen seek to tell what bitterness in him its glance causes. But it is as an electric stroke rending open his inmost nature, fusing all its dross, burning out the heart of sin, transforming the spirit into a powerful magnet, which obeys the heavenly attraction, until the prodigal son is brought back with honour and blessing, though elder brothers frown with incredulity. Still, he is like one, who is recovered by severe remedies from an acute disease: his frame is sore, his strength shattered, his soul struck with shame, his finger is as it were on his lips, and he dares not speak; but, like the leper conscious of uncleanness, he shrinks into solitude, and there makes complaint to Him who freely forgives. Time however will by God's mercy restore the prostrate soul; and it may be, that in this way lessons have been learnt and defects extirpated, for which no more lenient process would have been successful. To the milder forms of such humiliations all are liable, from the constant gravitating of the heart towards negligence and sluggishness and its old world;—(a dear old world, far too much reviled by spiritual men, yet not able to satisfy the Soul;)—and grievous as it is that they should be needed, it is certainly instructive to have insight into them. In vain is the moralist sceptical concerning the intensity of spiritual forces, when he carefully keeps

out of their region:—what knows the mere mechanician of electricity? In fact, the great transformations of character *must* be sudden. Between living for Sin and living for God, there is a yawning chasm; which must be passed *per saltum*, if at all.

The Scriptures of both Old and New Testaments are as emphatic in asserting, as moralizers are timid in admitting, the unlimited mercy and long-suffering of God: but surely it is one of the first elements spiritually discerned, that the impediments to acceptance with Him lie solely *in us*, and that there is no time or state conceivable, in which a man shall turn towards Him, and He refuse to hear. We cannot expect too much readiness in Him to save, too much tender compassion, for the plain reason that these qualities in Him are *infinite*. We are not straitened in Him, but we are straitened in our own bowels: our great danger, folly and even sin, lies in *unbelief* of His inexhaustible long-suffering. As soon as we do believe it, the thought of it kindles all our generous affections, and puts life into us. Nor is it possible for one who believes *the right thing*, to abuse it to evil ends: for it is not, that God will never leave a perverse and faithless heart to its own ruin and misery, or that if we harden our hearts to-day, He will soften them to-morrow; no: but that if *now* we turn to Him with all the heart, nothing that is past (however black it seem to us) is any obstacle with Him. I repeat it, from a deep sense of its importance: as long as we are desiring

*the right thing* of God,—that is, immediate spiritual recovery and renewed vigour,—we cannot expect it too enthusiastically. All the danger is the other way: we are double-hearted, we wish not, we expect not, and therefore we receive not. When we have become cold and uninterested in all spiritual things, we often cannot exactly tell *why*: perhaps it is through sinful negligence; or perhaps it is through the worry and distraction of business, and not wholly without physical causes. If we set about self-analysis to find out how far we are personally guilty, we may get into insoluble questions, and be more and more discouraged, the more we look within: for there is assuredly nothing there to strengthen us. But if we *can* exercise the energies of Faith, the fact is our sufficient warrant: for it proves that we are true-hearted: and thus we suddenly become strong out of the midst of our weakness. After we are in peace and power, self-analysis is most valuable and indeed necessary: it is instructive, humbling and bracing: but while we are cold and weak, it is a poisonous thing, like a draught of quinine while the ague-fit is upon one.

While it is needful to know the ways by which the Soul, when fundamentally upright, can always regain her lost love; it would be discouraging indeed, if we might not look earnestly forward to attain, even on this earth, a state in which the affections should be recovered as fast as lost,—at intervals so short, that the heart should never reproach itself for sin, but only sigh over its inherent weak-

ness. This seems to be the state, which the Wesleyans (to the scandal of other Christians) have denominated Perfection or Full Redemption, and after which they breathe in many beautiful and touching hymns. Surely we may expect, and ought to strive, that moral light may be so superadded to fervency of soul, that divine love may at length become in us, not as a torch blazing and smoky at intervals, but as a pure serene ever-burning flame, pervading all our nature, animating all our acts, consuming our evil principles, and kindling us to everything good, great and useful. This will lead us to inquire, whether the mind can form any more definite ideal of that to which it is to aspire, and whether there are any outward helps towards it. To these subjects the next Part will be devoted.

## PART IV.

### ON SPIRITUAL PROGRESS.

It has been seen, how the Soul, weak and wandering, like a storm-driven bird, learns to nestle in the bosom of the Infinite One, seeking peace and strength, until at length love towards Him is born within it: how then out of love springs insight,—insight of His prior and greater love to it; whence the opening of a purifying, strengthening and happy intercourse of the secret heart with Him. But *what* is it desiring? In word, it is easy to say,—it wants holiness and goodness like His own, that being perfectly like Him, it may be indissolubly united to Him: but in fact, it sees no true image of His holiness, and often scarcely knows what it wants. Moreover, when outward and moral evils have been triumphed over, when the best-known spiritual sins have been beaten down, it has strength to spare for action; and the question then arises, How is that strength to be employed?

It is a great error to imagine that high excellence can ever consist in a mere suppressing of some worse and lower tendency; the better part which we choose, may be itself not very elevated. The

soul may be freed from struggle and the conscience be at peace, because its highest convictions have triumphed; and yet its highest may be far from high. Nay, the triumph may be due, as much to the weakness of the inferior passions, as to any energy of the spiritual nature; so that a comfortable mediocrity is all that will result, unless the moral perceptions keep rising;—which is indeed the only healthful state. To this, however, it is probable that increasing mental culture is in certain stages essential. The subject is too wide to be here discussed, and can only be glanced at: but it is easy to see how pure intellectual error, depending on causes wholly unmoral, *may* and *does* perpetuate moral illusions, which are of the deepest injury to spiritual life, and keep it down to a very unsatisfactory level. In such case, the advance of that knowledge which is purely intellectual and *negative*, (which on that account religious men are apt to dread,) is an essential condition of farther spiritual progress. To destroy superstition does not in itself impart religion; yet the destruction is essential, if religion is to flourish.

But again: while the soul desires a higher holiness, it inquires, what are the peculiar aids (if any) towards attaining this object; and especially, what is the value of those which are offered by the practices of social religion or by others which are esteemed as “means of grace.” And although it is hard to give unity to these two discussions, it is not convenient to keep them far separate.

§ 1. *On the Ideal of Excellence.*

From childhood we hear it repeated, until it seems an axiom, that the human life of Christ is the pattern which we are practically to imitate: yet the moment we in good earnest attempt such imitation, we are beset by the most embarrassing difficulties. We find that his vestments will not fit us; his shape cannot be ours. The figure of him sketched out before us is, in part, fully painted up, but evidently inapplicable to our case; far more of it is left blank, so that we have to fill it out by our own imaginations. On this whole matter men willingly delude themselves: there is a great fiction which they dread to have unveiled: and it may be impossible to allude to broad matters of fact, without giving very grave offence. However intense one's conviction, common sense or humility forbids (for example,) to stir the bad passions of men invested with power by publicly denouncing them as hypocrites, blind guides, whited sepulchres; to speak at men's hearts, instead of answering their words; to use enigmatical and paradoxical expressions, which offend and confuse the hearers, and then withhold public explanation of them; purposely to encounter the malice of the unjust, and lay down one's life by self-chosen martyrdom. Grant that these things were all right in *Jesus*; still we discern and feel that they would be all wrong in *us*. And if in none of them we can follow him, it is equally doubtful whether we should wisely imitate him by spending

whole nights on the mountains in prayer, or forty days in fasting. In short, the more every detail is pursued, the more absurd it appears to propose his *conduct* (in deed, in word, or in its inward plan) as a pattern for ourselves. As to the *spirit* of his conduct, in contrast to the *letter*, no book can tell it to us, if our own hearts do not; and even as to outward things, numberless points will day by day present themselves, on which we are left to guess how he acted or would have acted. For instance, is it really true that he never laughed? This question goes deeper than at first appears. Let the image of Puritanical constrained gravity be duly considered, and we shall see how pernicious it is to imitate one to whom laughing may not be ascribed. Nay, but in our whole conception of revered names an illusion floats over our minds. Those who admire Paul in Raffael's cartoon, might perhaps despise him in a mean unpicturesque garb, especially if they found him short in stature, stammering, or sore-eyed\*, with nothing romantic about him. Exactly as we refuse to imagine him of vulgar appearance, so do we shrink from the idea of his hearty sympathy with a jocose expression or act: yet it would be rash and gratuitous to

\* His enemies said of him, that "his bodily presence was weak, and his speech contemptible." The "thorn in the flesh" of which he complains, has been plausibly explained both of stammering and of sore eyes. The present Bishop of Winchester supposes him to have been afflicted with extreme short-sightedness, and so accounts for many smaller curious facts.



maintain that Paul could not laugh with the same geniality as Luther. These are not matters which we could expect to find recorded ; yet whatever may be said concerning their dignity, to conceive rightly of them is very important. A sober view of human life shows that to proscribe the jocose side of our nature would be a blunder as grievous in its way as to proscribe love between men and women ; though in this last point again we see, that neither Christ nor Paul is an example to men in general. True religion wages no abstract war against any part of man, but gives to each part its due subordination or supremacy, and breathes sweetness and purity through all. There are times and places when we *can* not, as well as *may* not, laugh ; but it is by no means the highest state always to stifle laughter. That rather belongs to the stiff precisian, who fears to betray something false within him, and habitually wears a mask, lest his heart be too deeply exposed ; while the true-hearted fearlessly yields to his impulse, and no more wishes to hide it from the All-seeing eye, than a child would hide his childish sports from the eye of a father.

There is no question which has more vexed spiritual persons, than the propriety of occasionally gratifying others by joining them in some of the gaieties of life, by abstinence from which they often cause great offence : yet no authoritative solution can be gained by appeal to any scriptural pattern. *One* reasons : " Jesus went to a wedding ; therefore I may go to a ball ; especially since at an Oriental

wedding there was often dancing and music. *Another* retorts: "A wedding is a serious and religious transaction, consequently it cannot be here adduced: but we are commanded not to be conformed to this world; a precept which forbids us from gay parties, from the theatre, the opera, and public concerts, as well as from horse-races and country sports."—No analysis of the letter will ever decide such controversies. He who is under the Law, is satisfied with remarking, that "conformity to this world" means nothing but conformity to *its sins*, and that the text does not help to decide whether this particular case involves sin. He who desires to live to God, tries to feel with his soul whether sin (to him) *is* or *is not* here implicated; so the Spirit within is the real guide, and not the text, any more than the Scriptural example. Only a madman could reason: "Christ and his apostles are not recorded to have attended Plays or Oratorios; therefore I am prohibited." In short, whatever practical question may be started, we always alight on the same result, that *authoritative* examples and precepts (as such) can do us no good in the region of spirituality. Law can forbid definite acts of sin and command definite acts of duty; but when an action is not in itself sinful, nor in itself obligatory, no book-rules can forbid or command it. This is precisely the class of things with which *spiritual* (as transcending *moral*) life is concerned; and the conclusion is plain, that a book-revelation on such subjects is impossible. A per-

son who converts the history of Christ or Paul into a new authoritative *Law*, will often be driven to violate his own right feelings and sober judgment. Manifestly all sound-minded persons use these histories only by way of *suggestion*, and not as prescribing anything authoritatively. Thus the recorded life of Jesus is to us, in principle, only what the life of Melanchthon or Pascal may be: for it sometimes does, but far oftener does not, call us to imitation; and we have not and cannot have external guidance, when to follow it and when not; or external information as to the spirit in which each recorded action was performed. Indeed, when we read the exhortations of Paul or Peter "to imitate Christ," it ought not to be forgotten, that, *on the one hand*, these were addressed to persons who had no written narratives to call out the ingenuities of "exegesis"; *on the other*, the end sought was always to recommend by his (vaguely reported) example such virtues as heathen moralists often denied to be virtues: such, namely, as humility, resignation, long-suffering, condescension. So important was it to propose to the converts something in a concrete form that would make the meaning of such words more vivid to the mind, that Paul does not hesitate to refer to *his own* conduct, as a model which they would do well to imitate, though not as one absolutely perfect.

The case of conscience just now touched on is an instructive illustration of a general principle. The world at large is nearly divided between sur-

prise and contempt at the repugnance shown by spiritual persons to certain artificial pleasures; and undoubtedly the disposition of many to enact a new ceremonial law, which proclaims, "Thou shalt not dance: Thou shalt not play cards," &c., &c., will excuse, if it cannot justify, a great deal of ignorant raillery. Yet it cannot be by accident, that in different ages and countries, without any definite scriptural prohibition, spiritual persons coincide so markedly in apathy or dislike for pleasures of this description. I see not how to doubt that an instinct of the soul guides them, which is without law, and really higher than all law. A man who drinks within his own heart from a hidden well of joy, cannot run to fill his jug from an artificial tank: and if by any means that well is closed, his heart is widowed, and dreads to be comforted: then less than ever can he enjoy even the most innocent gratifications. Else, there are many pleasures which, if they come of themselves, he will accept, but which he cannot go to fetch. The simple glee of children, or the unstudied sallies of wit, may have a great zest for him in their measure; and yet he may feel an invincible repugnance to go out of his way for mirth or wit: if they are to be pleasant, they must be unsought and unpremeditated. So in regard to the gratification derived from those Public Amusements which profess to address the sense of Beauty, a discomfort might depend on the amount of effort required by them; but this probably is rather secondary. A feeling of Vanity in

*the circumstantial* is that which is painful and wearisome to the religious soul, though the feeling is often smothered through kindness and good breeding and from a belief that it will do harm to show it. What is meant by giving to outward glitter and manufactured mirth the offensive name "Vanity," is more than some can comprehend, who innocently ask "what harm there is" in a pretty sight. Perhaps there is none to them: they are in a puerile state: it may sometimes be right to humour them: at least this appears the best way of showing that no morosity mingles with distaste for such things. But it cannot be doubted, that a person who *against the instincts of his soul* should become (for instance) a constant opera-goer or play-goer, merely to please others,—although it is most true that he is free from Law in such matters,—will incur great spiritual mischief: for he will overbear and beat down the inward law of his heart.

And this leads farther to a distinct enunciation, that as we can neither wish nor have a better rule, concerning the things which a common moralist calls "indifferent," than the Law of the Spirit within us, so real spiritual progress will be attended by the clearing and strengthening of this inward instinct; in short, therefore, by the overspreading growth of a *pure enthusiasm*. This is the greatest charm of character, even where it is partial and independent of spiritual influences: but the highest idea of human perfection, is, that this should per-

vade the whole man, and, in consistency with the truest wisdom, should animate every set of actions, while the instinct guides through all delicate questions of right and wrong. The upright and faithful soul knows and feels what things do, and what do not, impair communion of heart with its God; this is its great clue to its right and wrong; so it is alternately scrupulous where a moralist would be bold, and bold where a moralizer might be prudish. Again, by the nourishment of its generous affections it gains a power of impulse, by which it is enabled to carry into effect its right conceptions. All know that in the practical world enthusiasm is the chief moving power; and is very effective, even when joined with narrow and distorted judgment. Our misery has been, that the men of thought have no religious enthusiasm, and the enthusiastically religious shrink from continuous thought; and this must continue until our Theology is shifted away from its present basis. That the instincts of the soul, if there are any, are of first-rate importance, ought to be confessed even by those who know nothing of them: for if the instinct of brutes be the guidance of God within them, (*Deus anima brutorum*,) what else is the Soul's instinct but the Spirit of God? But, be it granted, such analogies are deceptive: still, by what else but this instinct was Divine Existence ever discovered at all? what, but the Soul, groping after Him, taught all nations of men to be familiar with these high ideas? And if the unenlightened heathen Soul achieved so great

a revelation, what ought that Soul to do, all whose powers are stimulated by the love of God, and by constant intercourse with Him ?

This is not a doctrine much talked of nowadays; but time was, when it was believed by prophets and apostles. They did not tell of *two* Spirits of God, one extraordinary, and one ordinary; one, which by them dictated propositions, and another which inclined the hearers to "submit their corrupt understanding" to the propositions. Every living member of Christ's body, the Church, was (in *their* belief) animated by "the Selfsame Spirit," who "divided to each severally as He would"; and the Gospel was preached, in order that those who believed it might *all* receive that life-giving and enlightening power, and be themselves able to listen to the voice of God directing them. Thus of Zion it was to be said, "All thy children shall be taught of the Lord, and great shall be the peace of thy children": out of each man's heart were to flow rivers of living water: and their teachers professed not to usurp "dominion over their faith, but only to be helpers of their joy": nor did they give them a new law of the letter, written with ink, but a law written on the fleshy tablets of the heart; bidding them not to quench the Spirit, and, to prove what was the perfect will of God. But now, by idolizing the letter, men do quench the Spirit within them; and then, are unable to understand that very letter, which they blazon forth in purple and gold.

If we would be holy and enlightened as Paul, we

must do as Paul did ; not by slavishly copying the outside of his conduct, but by nourishing our inward spirit as he nourished his. He refused to learn his religion of men, but listened to the voice of God : and so have all the great and good men done, whose religious action can be thankfully remembered. Undoubtedly they have all been liable to the grievous inconsistency of being unwilling to leave other souls as free as they claim that their own shall be. They feel to the very bottom of their nature, that they cannot serve two masters ; and that if they are to be subject to God in earnest, they must be free from the yoke of men : and yet, alas ! no sooner do they find themselves at the head of admiring and obedient multitudes, than they proceed to impose their own yoke on others, and, if possible, on their successors for ever. In early times, the intense evils of this had not been historically unfolded, and the apparent practical advantages of it overbore the abstract remonstrances of conscience ; but in the present ripeness of experience all cultivated minds have before them the full means of disabusing themselves from such illusions. The immense developement of pure intellect must show every thoughtful man the impossibility (not to say the wickedness) of sacrificing the Intellect to the Soul ; and wherever there is true Faith, there is an unhesitating conviction that there cannot possibly be any real collision between these two parts of human nature. It is now no common guilt, when a man uses his spiritual influence to frown



## THE SOUL :

down any honest intellectual research : but more of this afterwards.

The pure and pervading enthusiasm to which the soul should tend, is a very different thing from eccentricity, and would not show itself in superficial excitement, much less in wayward and fickle conduct. It is a deep inward fire, slowly fusing the opaque mass of nature, and bidding it to crystallize into new shapes and refract God's light into a thousand hues, so that the whole man is about to be transparent, only that the eye of the observer is dazzled. Under this influence, each soul will assume *its own character* ; no one aping another, all being unlike, yet the likeness of God being on all : for God has myriads of forms, but one essence. In the commencement of this action, the instincts of the Soul are hardly self-conscious ; and long after, no intellectual ideal of that at which they aim, is as yet presented to the mind : but unless this is a mere dream of theory, it would seem that in all higher types of spiritual life each must at length shape to himself *his own Ideal*, and know what is his service. So Paul conceived of one as an Eye, one as a Hand ; no two members alike, but each fitted for his own work. The work, described positively, may be called God's work ; but if we ask what work deserves to be so named, the easiest reply is the negative one, that it is *not* that of the world or of the flesh ;—which means, not that of selfishness and self-indulgence or self-glorifying. *He* works the work of God (even if he knows not God,) who

works unselfishly for a good end: thus also Faith in God is justly said to "overcome the *world*," or, to mortify all the *selfish* principles which are collectively so denoted. Now nothing is more unworldly than enthusiasm in every form: in Art, in Science, in Politics, in Trade, it is (even when isolated from religion) an inveterate antagonist of selfishness: nor is there any character for whom the worldly (or selfish) man feels so much contemptuous pity, as for an enthusiast, until some undeniably great result forces him to confess that enthusiasm is a powerful reality. The enthusiasm however of which we speak, is not, like these, a partial and one-sided impulse, but implies a warm love of every thing Good and True, with as warm indignation against their opposites;—both feelings rising out of the sympathy of the soul with the centre of all Goodness, and its forgetfulness of self in the midst of the great interests all round at stake.

While in all "indifferent" matters (that is, those which Law cannot command or forbid) the inward instinct is the rightful guide, its powers are stimulated by discerning the instincts of others; and this is God's provision for the progress of moral sentiment. Even brute animals have taught men most valuable lessons, and act as daily monitors to us. Their patience and docility, their gratitude and faithfulness, their bravery and self-devotion are delightful to see: and the same may be said of a hundred virtues, which, like wild flowers, bloom all round us in simple half-instructed natures. Let

H

not the spiritual man despise the world of common men; for if he is wise, that world is his best outward moral teacher, at least until there shall be more of nature in the church. From time to time indeed a young enthusiasm arises, and developes on the border of the church some new virtue, as zeal against war and against slavery in the Society of Friends, reverence for intellectual freedom in the Unitarians, and others which cannot be mentioned without moving controversy as to fact. Against all new virtues a false church fights long and hard, alledging that they "are not in the bond" of her Law; though, when they have conquered men's consciences, she comes in to claim the victory, as won by her energies. Christianity in its origin was nothing but a new enthusiasm, born in men's souls by the working of God's Spirit; so, believers "challenged one another to love and good works." This mutual rivalry still continues, with benefit, I suppose; although our increased knowledge of the complicated framework of society shows us how much political and intellectual wisdom is often needed for judging what *kindly meant* works are really *good* works.

But are there antiquated virtues, as well as new ones? Was it a folly in the first apostles to abandon their boats and nets, in order to become fishers of men? or was it a virtue which is now wholly out of date? and is no lesson whatever now to be learned from that apparently fanatical saying,—If a man forsake not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple? Consider, Reader, whether the following is

not true. Many persons, and peculiarly teachers of religion, are liable to find themselves in a position, where rules from without forbid them to follow freely the Spirit of God within them. A man who discerns this to be his own case, is called by God (more clearly than if it were spoken by thunder from a cloud) to give up all his worldly interests, as Paul did; and until he gains strength for this sacrifice, he stunts and cripples his own spiritual growth, and loses living energy. The same thing applies to all, who find the routine of their worldly business or profession to involve practices, which the Spirit within them condemns: if they are faithful to God, they will at all risks of worldly loss refuse consent to such practices. No greater trials of principle can in these days (when bodily martyrdom is unknown) befall men who have wives and children depending on them, and whose sphere in life seemed to be fixed. To condemn those who shrink from the sacrifice, could not occur to any one who duly knows his own weakness; yet he would not the less sorrowfully feel, that such persons will not be counted worthy of promoting the kingdom of God.

From so highly developed a soul as that of Paul, presented to us in the outpourings of authentic epistles, valuable hints may be gleaned concerning the higher progress of the inward life; especially as to the actings of Hope and of Intercession. The topic of Hope is reserved for the next Part. As for Intercession:—when the divine Spirit has so conquered the old or common nature, that though

there may still be occasional conflict, there is no anxiety, but (under all ordinary trials) a calm foresight of victory as soon as any collision of desires is felt ; the soul, I suppose, overflows self, and commences cares or anxieties for others ; which are impossible, and their pretence hypocritical, while the self is still consciously but half subdued. Hence there came upon Paul daily the care of all the churches. Hence his fervent and continual prayers for the spiritual advance of his beloved children in the faith, and for the progress of divine truth. Nay, to judge by his letters, prayer for his own soul might seem to have been swallowed up in prayer for others. That this is the highest or *limiting* state, we appear as it were to divine. Accordingly Paul himself, while seeking reverentially to shadow forth the occupation of Messiah in the heavenly world, could imagine no loftier ideal of excellence, than that he was engaged in Intercession : a view, which at a very early date recommended itself to the whole church.

A philosophical difficulty may nevertheless be here started. The soul (it may be said) not absurdly hopes that God will aid its own desires to be obedient to Him ; but He does not give it a *carte blanche*, to ask for things which do not concern its own perfection. How can we possibly know, that He will hear our prayers for the bodily or even spiritual health of one dear to us ; to say nothing of distant matters ? The reply does not seem difficult : We do *not* know that he will hear us. Then why

do we pray? Why, neither do we know that he will *not* hear us; hence, when the soul is deeply moved, it *cannot help* praying for what it wants. Not to do so, would be an unnatural constraint: the full heart *must* vent itself to the Lord of Mercy and Love, who surely cannot disapprove of this. Nay, we know and are certain, that even though His inscrutable wisdom should see that the prayer cannot be granted, He would accept it, and we should be blessed in uttering it.

It may still be asked, Why do we pray for things, about which we do not feel much concern? This however I may leave to others to answer: it certainly appears a mere dreary hypocrisy, like Fasting and Prayer at the word of command: yet something will be said on the point in the next Section under the head of Liturgies. It here suffices to remark, that "to pray because we think we ought to pray," is not really prayer, but at best is meditation or reverential homage. If a man has no heart for prayer, yet knows that he ought to desire certain things, let him muse until the fire kindles, and at last let him speak with his tongue. But when no fire is kindled, it is heathenish credulity to imagine that God will care for a verbally offered petition.

It may also appear that after the earlier and most necessary steps of spiritual advance, the soul can profitably bear stronger views of the grander attributes of God, and takes more pleasure in contemplating them; whence is derived a tranquil dignity to itself. Its joys also have less of excitement,

but greater depth, continuity and evenness: nay, their current is uninterrupted, though manifold sorrows may ripple on the surface, by impulses from without. At least this is that which *à priori* may be expected, as agreeing with all analogy. So also it is in this stage that the magnificent researches of modern Science, which strengthen our powers of imagination concerning the extent of Existence, in time and space, and the pervading uniformity of Law, become peculiarly beneficial; because there is no longer danger lest the personality of God, and his proper relation to the individual soul, should be lost in the dim Infinity which is spread out before the intellect. Then we can admire and wonder at Him, as the Blessed and Only Potentate, dwelling in light which no man can approach unto; and not at all lose the fixed assurance, that He dwells also in every contrite heart, and opens His ear to every cry of the hungering and thirsting soul. Thus also a reconciliation is finally brought about between Science and Faith, the Understanding and the Soul. God is recognised both *without* us, and *within* us. Man is seen to be essentially free, yet is felt both in right and in fact to be God's servant and friend. All that he has, is from God, and is to be cultivated for God: powers of mind are not to be left unused, any more than riches.

There is certainly something wanting to the Ideal of the perfect man, prevalent in religious circles: nor is this to be wondered at. As long as it was supposed that Christ would in a few years return, to

close this earthly scene ;—while the fields were ripe to the harvest, and the labourers were few ;—while a messenger to tell the truth, seemed of all things most urgently needed ; no course was judged so serviceable, or so noble, as that the rich and cultivated man should abandon his wealth and his worldly calling, forswear his learning and his tastes, and become a preacher of the gospel. The total change of circumstances, and no small amount of experience, now give warning that this can only in exceptional cases be desirable. If such a person has dedicated his soul to its rightful owner, he will find some way of bestowing his energies in great measure for unselfish objects ; either for external and immediate Utility, or for the attainment of abstract, or for the diffusion of practical, Truth, or for the establishment of Right and Justice, or in works of Love and Mercy, or in the unselfish cultivation of the Beautiful. Yet with most (unless I mistake) it is a sort of enigma, how Art and Politics and Science are to blend with the highest religious character ; and that, because our notions are unduly based upon those Scriptural types, whose position was too different from ours to make them any adequate pattern. I do not think it an exaggeration to say, that among ourselves the most spiritually minded persons (if we speak of them in the mass) are apt to be more or less scandalized at zeal for Science or Fine Art in one whom they hope to be spiritual. They sigh over a good man, who lavishes his talents on such objects instead of devoting them to (what they call)



the glory of God ; a phrase which would seem to mean,—direct attempts to teach spiritual truth. They condescendingly patronize an astronomer or scholar, who is reported to have some religious tendencies and to be orthodox ; and if he be very enthusiastic in his own pursuits, they still hope, that *in spite* of this, he has “the root of the matter in him,” and will gain some low seat among the redeemed. Such notions are only another development of the same error, which once sent men into deserts or convents, and misnamed long prayers “divine service.” To sacrifice Imagination or Intellect, and to sacrifice Domestic Affection, are about on a par. That the human mind was meant to labour for the Useful, to contemplate the Beautiful, to possess itself of the True, and contend for the Right, as well as to worship the Holy, or imitate the Bountiful One, seems to be quite an axiom of thought : and wisely to blend all, as circumstances allow, must be the highest human perfection. A true Faith believes without proof that all these things shall work together for good ; and that God, who is at once Productiveness, Beauty, Truth, Right, Mercy, Bounty, and Holiness, is in them all.

May we not here gain some instruction from that which is told of celebrated Italian painters?—how they have, from mere love of their art, spent on a picture labour tenfold of what the set price required, and have preferred to live in extreme self-denial, rather than not execute it in their highest style. This seems to typify the unworldly spirit, in which, when

we are more perfect, we shall follow our trades or our professions, of whatever kind. There is a prevalent opinion,—I fear not destitute of foundation; that *as a body* the more religious part of our nation is more sordid in its business-tone than the world. Possibly this may be interpreted, that there are among the former fewer instances of unselfish devotion to their worldly calling; which they are accustomed to regard as not deserving their affections, but only fit to be pursued for its gains. It is principally in men who have no ostensible religious character that we see the self-devoting pursuit of some honourable profession: and these are now in England only too rare. For alas, there is such eagerness to get rich, that enthusiasm for one's work, *in and for itself*, is scarcely credited by the majority; and there are many necessary employments, which may seem almost incapable of calling out enthusiasm, and yet, most distressingly over-occupy both time and mind. I do not at all mean to say that every man's profession *ought to be* his absorbing passion: only, it *may be*, and that, on a religious ground\*. It is certainly a narrow belief, taken up on too slavish a principle of imitation, that

\* The germ of this sentiment is seen in Paul, who bids slaves "to do service with good will, *as to the Lord, and not unto men.*" The precept shows how entirely he felt the meanest occupation to be sanctified by and to a religious heart; and that if he were exhorting us moderns, he would enlarge it to embrace our several professions. Indeed this is not at all a strained interpretation of his words in Rom. xii. "Not slothful in business, fervent in spirit, serving the Lord:" that is:—serving the Lord *by being* not slothful, &c.

when there is the deepest and soundest spirituality, the actions will proclaim this on their surface. Where the deed is lawful, so that the moralist is satisfied, the question for the spiritualist is not, what it is, but in what spirit it is done. An enthusiastic geologist or chemist or astronomer or sculptor, whose whole life seems to be absorbed in what many religious people would erroneously call the World, not only may be eminently unworldly, but may be "serving God" more directly and effectually than he could in any other way: for the evolving of Truth and culture of Imagination tend to elevate and perfect Man, side by side with the influences of direct Devotion. For nearly two centuries, men of Science have been our only school of Prophets. There is no war between the parts of the human mind; and, (other things being equal,) he who best loves God will with most untiring energy and singleness of mind pursue whatever good work his genius has fitted him for. No one needs so little relaxation as he, in whose heart dwells the Lord of strength and of peace.

### § 2. *On the* "MEANS OF GRACE."

It cannot be doubted that we in this day are the spiritual progeny of Patriarchs and Prophets, derived by a genuine *Apostolic Succession*. As in Science, so in Religion; we have borrowed the light of our predecessors, and it has kindled light in us. We see and believe by means of Prophets and Apostles, and yet not because of them; for though

our life has come through them, it would not be life, if it were not now independent of theirs. The Mathematician enjoys the fruit of high intellects such as Archimedes, Newton, Euler, La Place; and had not these men, and hundreds of congenial spirits, laboured before him, he would not now know what he knows: yet by their aid he so sees the whole truth from its simplest elements, that their names and their authority never enter the premisses of the argument which convinces him. Just so is it with the modern worshipper. Although he sees for himself, he gratefully acknowledges the essential aid derived from great predecessors, and feels the golden chain which binds him to the past. Consequently, neither can he overlook the last link of that chain,—the instrumentality by which his heart was first brought into sympathy with Psalmists and Apostles. And if so, he cannot despise or undervalue those external media of spiritual improvement, which, as transmitting feeling from soul to soul, might be briefly denoted as “means of Fellowship.”

But Fellowship, like everything else that is good in spiritual things, has been turned into *formality*; and we are beset with a variety of competing “ordinances,” which claim to be “means of grace.” The most prominent are Fasting, Sacraments, Attendance at Liturgies, Prayer Meetings, and Sermons. With a view to most of these, many will press the close observance of Sunday.

1. It is truly vexatious, eighteen hundred years after Paul's career, to have to fight Paul's battles

against those who profess themselves not only his grateful children, but his unreasoning obedient disciples. It is indeed superfluous here to prove, what is on the face of the New Testament, that Sundays are not Sabbaths, that Sabbaths are no part of Gentile Christianity, and that Sundays have in the Scripture nothing to do with abstinence from worldly business. The Puritan School of England and Scotland shuts its eyes to the plainest facts, because it believes it to be *useful* to hold that Sunday is Sabbath, and Sabbath binding upon us. In vain shall we point to Paul's contemptuous disavowal of Sabbaths, and his declaration that he who disregards sacred days is justified, so that he only disregard them to the Lord. In vain may it be proved from the Christian history, that, until Constantine, Sunday was a working day with Christians. In vain will it be shown that all the great Reformers held the ancient and Catholic doctrine, that the observance of Sunday is a mere ordinance of the Church, not a command of God ; and that until the English and Scotch Sabbatarians (towards the close of the 16th century) invented the Puritanical doctrine on this subject, it was unknown to the Christian Church. As long as Englishmen care more for supposed Expediency, than for Truth, they will, through thick and thin, stickle for a divinely obligatory Sabbath, unless one show them that this falsehood has its evil and dangerous side.

Our ears are dinned with the false cry : " The Sabbath, the *boon* of the working man." In

many cases, say rather, his *bane*. He rests from labour: true: but he labours only so much the harder on the other six days. Physically, he would be better for labouring six hours on Sunday, and one hour less on every other day. Spiritually also this would be far better:—*first*, for the irreligious man. For the irreligious are tempted to make it a day of carousing and sensuality; and the more its sanctity is preached, the greater is this danger; because it makes their conscience bad, and generally hinders them from getting any but bad companions. More sin of every kind in England and Scotland is committed on Sunday than on any other day of the week; and of this, the (so-called) Sabbatical Institution is in great measure guilty.—Then as for the less religious, yet conscientious man. The Sunday hangs heavy upon him: it is a stupid sleepy day: superstition forbids his even improving his mind during its hours; and with one seventh part of time left free, he still (strange to think!) has no leisure for mental cultivation. Puritanical notions about the Sabbath are thus at present the greatest of all impediments to the effectual education of the industrious classes. Thirdly, even for the sincerely religious poor, Sunday is far too long a day for continued spiritual thought. They have not inward energy enough to fill up the time with it, and they covet to be in church as much as possible: very generally *three* “services” do not seem to them too much; but this very fact proves that their souls are passive under it all, and get no more good than

they might have from *one*. Far better would it be, to have on Sunday six hours of work, say, from 6 to 9 in the morning, and from 5 to 8 in the evening; with *one* meeting in church to last from 11 to 12. The working man might then have a pleasant relaxation on Sunday, with no time heavy on his hands. There would be hours enough for religious meditation and for the greetings of kinsmen, and there might also be an hour's more rest on every day of the week. Surely this would be both spiritually and physically better.

It is thus pure fiction, that a Puritanical Sabbath is better *for a working man* than a Christian Sunday, such nearly as the second and third generation of Christians observed. But the modern Sabbath tends a great deal more to the *grandeur of a sacerdotal body*; and this was felt by the instinct of those bishops who first moved Constantine to enact it. On an English Sunday the clergyman and the "minister" are in their glory. They are not conscious that this impels them so urgently to enforce the day: but when we see the trumpery nature of the arguments, both from the New Testament and from expediency, on which they rest its divine obligation, it appears certain that there is *some* sinister bias; and if so, I see not how to avoid the opinion that—I do not say the *individual*, but the strong *public*, opinion on this subject, is generated out of the merely professional zeal of religious ministers. As military officers want larger armies and great wars, so does a professional clergy cry out for long

Sabbaths, more churches, and crowded seats. These things are, with the few, means to a higher end; but with the majority, the end most felt is, the increased dignity of the profession.

Sundays are now a political institution: no one can propose to abolish them: but let every one try to make the best of them. **FIRST**, by abandoning the false pretence of their observance being a divine command:—itself an intrinsic incredible absurdity, as well as without a shadow of New Testament proof. **SECONDLY**, by encouraging mental cultivation of the largest and most liberal kind on that day, and greatly shortening the prayers:—but of this, more will be said. **THIRDLY**, by facilitating and inviting attendance at church, wherever masses of people are disposed to flock for the recreation of country air; as at Richmond and Greenwich near London, and many other places near to great cities. **FOURTHLY**, by solemnly urging, that religion demands the whole heart for God on *every* day, and that no compromise can be made by looking grave or dressing clean for one day.

The truly spiritual, who turn many hours of the Sunday to the best purpose, generally value the institution; for they, not unnaturally, neglect to inquire whether it does not take away from them on six days the time which it seems to give so liberally on the seventh. A few may possibly use the whole day profitably for purely spiritual action, but I suspect that they are *very* few; and the more acute



their sense of the sacredness of the hours, the greater the danger of misery from it. Personally I can testify, that for several years of my life, when a youth and very young man, Sunday was of all days to me the most painful ; because, with all my efforts to consecrate it, I could not practically reach up to my abstract idea of its sanctity. It also threw me into collision with my elders, and caused me to refuse obedience to them, under the idea that the Law of God constrained me. Justly then do I hate the Sabbatical fiction, as a cause of real sin to the anxious and well intentioned, as well as to the careless and uncontrolled.

2. And is it requisite here to speak of Fasting ? If any one after trial thinks that he himself finds spiritual benefit from such a practice, no one can blame him for continuing it. Yet it may justly make others watch more sharply, whether it develops in him Pharisaic and other Sacerdotal vices : and if they see him disposed to uphold hierarchical dominion and asceticism generally, they will have a right to say, that he has gone back from spirituality into a system of carnal ordinances. On the other hand, a more offensive piece of impertinent domineering, in spiritual matters, is scarcely conceivable, than for a number of "divines" to meet and pass a law as to the days and hours at which other people, and indeed generations unborn, shall fast for an imagined spiritual end. Those who call themselves successors of the Apostles and defend such things, should at

least point out in the authentic writings of the Apostles some instances in which they thus dictated to their converts.

But what says Paul? "If ye be dead with Christ from the elements of the world," [such outward ceremonies as he has just named,—meat and drink, holy days, new moons, and sabbath days,] "why, as though living in the world, do ye subject yourselves to dogmas,—Touch not! Taste not! Handle not!—all which [dogmas?] tend to corruption in the using; after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will-worship and humility and neglecting of the body; but are not of any value in comparison \* to the satisfying of the flesh." The sense of some words in the Greek is contested; and I do not pretend certainty that he means in the last clause:—"adequate nourishment to the body *is of some value*; while fasting is of no use at all, either to body or soul." But it is quite certain that the entire passage was intended to throw contempt upon *the ordinance of Fasting*, as upon other Asceticism, and exhort his converts to refuse subjection to those who tried to impose such things. Against the *practice*, as such, he evidently no more made war than against the ceremonial law, and he speaks of it without reproof, 1 Cor. vii. 5; but there is no †

\* Οὐκ ἐν τιμῇ τινι πρὸς ἀληθευμένην σαρκός. Coloss. ii. 20–22.

† The fastings of Paul, 2 Cor. vi. 5. xi. 27, are both times enumerated by him among *involuntary hardships* endured for preaching the Gospel.

evidence that he himself looked on it as of any value. Of meats and drinks in general we may say with him,—Let every one be persuaded in his own mind: if he eat, let him eat to the Lord and give thanks: if he eat not, let it be to the Lord that he eats not; and let him give thanks. It may be added, that according to Christ's precepts, whoever fasts must conceal the fact of his fasting. This entirely condemns *Public* fasts.

3. Sacraments and Liturgies may be embraced in one thought; for it is superfluous to argue against the pretended magical force of a Sacrament, until some tangible proof of it is adduced. Men's feelings towards Liturgies appear liable to go through several stages. The original rude and unspiritual feeling is that of those who do not attempt to pray with the heart, though they may devoutly repeat the words, but receive them all as a sort of *bidding to pray*. Such is clearly the case with children, and with great numbers of grown people. Thus the Liturgy is to them, not a prayer, but an aid to meditation, and an instruction, by example, *how* to pray: as such, its use appears to be very great. They more or less intelligently think over parts of it; and now and then really join in some prayer, especially in those for temporal mercies and for forgiveness of sins. Thus a Liturgy, like the old Law, is admirably adapted to those whom Paul calls "the children of the bond-woman," who have not yet received the Spirit of adoption; and therefore fitly belongs to any very extensive or hereditary Church.

But secondly, there are many who rise above this puerile state ; who reverentially essay to pray all the prayers, and believe that they succeed in it. These are those whom I have called *the once-born* children of God ; who, having a sound conscience and sincere mind, have yet no strong developement of the soul. Their hearts do not prompt prayer actively, and it is rather pleasant to them to have petitions suggested to their intellect from without : and as they have no depth of spiritual sorrow or joy, they can without conscious hypocrisy play rapidly one after another all the modulations of an ample Liturgy. The most varied tones find in them an equal response : " Have mercy upon us, miserable sinners ! Oh come let us sing unto the Lord ! Sing we merrily with a loud noise ! Lord, have mercy upon us ! Christ have mercy upon us ! We are tied and bound with the chain of our sins ! We thank thee for the hope of glory ! " The doleful repetitions of a Litany do not pall upon their spirit, but seem to soothe it. Their hearts are as wax to be moulded by the recitation ; and though it is difficult to call this *prayer*, it cannot be denied that they have been *in a devotional posture of soul*, which to them is decidedly beneficial. Whether they listen reverently to the sounds of a voluntary, under the " dim religious light " of a stained window, or respond to the low chant of the cathedral " service,"—seems to be nearly the same thing. They pray feebly for five hundred different things, taking no absorbing or strong interest in any.

They do not pray because they want a thing, but because it is a duty : and certainly the process reminds them of God, enlivens their conscience, soothes their mind and refreshes it after the worry of life, tranquillizes all rude passions, and altogether, brings much moral benefit. It is a great error to undervalue this ; it is an act of Reverence, if neither Prayer nor Praise. They wonder how any can disparage the excellent institutions of "our Church," and attribute it to an unreasonable presumption, bordering on impiety. And long habits of attachment to the same cling to them very frequently, even when they pass into the number of *the twice-born*, if the transition has been gradual, slow and ill marked.

Thirdly, those in whom the phenomena of the new birth have been powerfully brought out, are often (and I should suspect, generally) thrown into uncomfortable collision with a Liturgy, at least such a one as that of the English Church. Their spirit rushes in one direction, when the Liturgy would call them in another. They vehemently want one thing, and are hereby made conscious how little they care for the rest of the five hundred things : then they feel ashamed and guilty for the lukewarmness of their prayers, and their hearts are made heavy by attendance. They have plenty of narrow but energetic prayer in themselves, and cannot bear this miscellaneous profusion from without : and when their minds deviate into meditations of their own, (far more profitable *to them* than such languid

prayer could be,) they often have an-unquiet conscience, and scourge their wanderings as a grievous sin. Besides, many things are probably felt as a positive offence, through some want of harmony between the joyful or hopeful state of the worshipper and the depressed and often depressing tone of the Liturgy; which seems made for persons strong and copious in orthodoxy, but weak in spiritual life. I forbear to illustrate this, lest I needlessly give pain: for the remark is not directed against Liturgies *as such*: nevertheless, it tends to show how delicate is the problem of constructing a formulary which shall neither impede high devotion nor involve anything too peculiar\*.

A woman of fervent and transparent soul informed me, that she always, *on principle*, allowed her heart to carry her in prayer wherever it pleased, in spite of the Liturgy; in which way she could always enjoy it *more or less*, by dropping all that was uncongenial. And this appears to be the transition to the fourth state; in which the person who has long struggled in vain to adjust his soul to the Liturgy, at length discerns that it cannot be; that it is an unwise attempt; that God does not ask it of him: and if still he sees a general benefit in the institution to others, and that there ought to be some such

\* The Lord's Prayer appears to be a perfect formula, as *dictating the topics* of fixed Public Prayer. But one party among us has made it a formality, by merely adopting its letter without the spirit, another dislikes the Prayer for its meagreness. For a Liturgy, its imagined meagreness is its excellence.

thing, then in conscious uprightness before God he freely takes liberties which he once would have thought profane: leaves off scolding his mind for wandering, translates words into others more suitable to him, and cares only for one thing,—that his heart shall rise to God or brood over holy thoughts, whether in connexion with the public prayer or otherwise. And the same nearly applies to the prayers of Scotch and Dissenting Churches, whenever they are intellectually constructed. But, it will be perceived, that a person who attends public prayer in this spirit, is really “going to Church *for example's sake* :” he would get more benefit in private. Hence he does this out of the superabundance of his spiritual strength, as a charity to others; which, however possible now and then, is likely to become an unbearable tax for a continuity.

Be it however admitted; there is possibly, beyond all these, a fifth state, in which the spirit of Intercession has developed itself and a serene atmosphere has been reached; the Soul retains all its earnestness, and yet is so harmoniously blended with the moral Will, that the man can to a great extent determine the direction and force of his own spiritual affections. A character thus perfect, would be able, if only the petitions of a Liturgy are right ones, to pray them all in turn. Such persons, it is to be feared, are very rare: (for where that holy spirit of Intercession lives, the whole man must be wonderfully perfect, nor would this be an unappreciable fact:) and if there are such, they must have gone

through lower states in attaining their elevation, and will not represent it to be an easy thing to carry the heart and soul along with a various Liturgy. For these reasons, it appears to me, that Forms of Prayer, when long, are useful, if at all, in the inverse proportion to the developement of spiritual life. To the ignorant and to young persons they are of extreme importance, as instructing them how to pray; but for these likewise, they ought not to be tedious. To the religious, who are elevated the first step above these, they afford *a time* for vague and perhaps dreamy reverence, like the sensuous worship by music; but are profitable, chiefly because little attempt is made to use them as genuine prayer and praise. To the young spiritualist they are a painful burden; by the advanced spiritualist they may be borne perhaps, by reason of his strength, but they are often or always a trial to that strength and in no respect a help to him. He may nevertheless find blessing: for when all the heartstrings are tuned to the chants of heaven, the soul will often respond sweet melody even to the discords of heathenism.

If however this is not all true, if there be another side of the question, which is here overlooked,—still I am justified in protesting against that tyranny of public opinion, which stigmatizes as irreligious all who are indisposed to “come to Church,” and hinders each from following the indications of his inward monitor. Under Church, I include Chapel; for there is much in common. The Prayer of the Dissenting minister is less various in its topics and



much shorter than the public Liturgy: these are advantages: but there is no better security that it shall stand in any relation to the existing state of the hearer. There are ministers perhaps, who, before prayer, try to bring the hearer's mind to the right tone, and then pray in the suitable key: and this appears to me the only plausible way. The Sermon or Address ought (I think) to *precede* the prayer, which should on no account seek to be comprehensive. Where the minister can follow his own judgment, much may be done for the better:—but then also, much may be for the worse; all depends on the individual. Consequently, there is no justification of the new ceremonial law, which orders all to Church or Chapel, whether benefit be experienced or no. Nay, the old phrase “divine service,” (in Greek, “Liturgy” or public service,) expresses the prevalent idea. It is imagined that we are to go to Church *to do some service to God*, not, to get some good from Him: and this superstition stands firm, equally among Dissenters, unawares.

It would be wrong here to deny that there may be persons, whose hearts are such gushing fountains of spiritual affection, that their private prayer is uniformly a full stream, as is in fact supposed in following a public Liturgy. But (as far as I am able to learn) this is with the majority of devout persons rather an exceptive case. Ordinarily the contrast is great between the private and the ostensible worship. For, except when the heart is peculiarly full, the prayer of earnest solitary devotion

may be compared to a bird of short flight: it mounts up with sudden impulse, but before long stagnates or falls again. Moments of meditation seem necessarily interposed, before a new effort is possible; so that it consists of many disjoined irregular breathings of the heart, not always momentary, yet seldom long, even though it be based upon the words of a book open before the worshipper. Hence, in a continuous system of public prayers, a very frequent wandering of the mind appears (to me, I confess) quite inevitable, a thing to be calculated on, because of the prevailing weakness of the worshippers. Even to keep up with the simplest and best known of formulas,—the Lord's Prayer,—is to some an unmanageable task, unless the reader were to occupy threefold of the time which is generally allowed, with pauses between the versicles.

But after all, how much of *Fellowship* is there in public prayer? It is difficult to say how little. Each worshipper is isolated: there is little or no mutual consciousness, except between each and the reciter. When indeed a whole congregation is sensibly animated by one Spirit, then no doubt there is Fellowship: but how often is that? Nor can I at all admit the notion, that (as an ordinary thing) long prayers in *private* are that, which the new nature dictates, in proportion to the energy which it displays. Indeed for what moral purposes is the Soul imbued with the love of God? First and chiefly, for its own sake, that it may attain its own best condition: but secondly, *that it may work, in*

*and for the world*; "with good heart doing service, as unto the Lord, and not unto men." Most erroneous, and as I sincerely believe, most unscriptural, is the notion, that much continuous time is then to be occupied by what are called "religious exercises,"—long prayers, long public services, or any of those things which experience proves rather to generate Pharisaism. Paul recommends to his converts to pray *always*, rejoice *without ceasing*, and *in every thing* give thanks, but we find in him no exhortations to church-services, sacraments, fastings, or any formal processes. I cannot but think, that these things, as practically conducted, need to be reckoned with "the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things," which blight the young gospel-blade: and the matrimonial analogy might here give a clue to the real position of things. Young lovers are so absorbed in long earnest talk, so anxious to sound one another's hearts, that they are drawn off from other business: but when their new relation is ascertained and their mutual affection is a fixed fact, they become the more energetic in their respective tasks because of their love; which love would languish, if they were idle and tried to live upon it. So too the soul, when so conscious of its fixed union with God, as to be strung to a new and unusual pitch of spirituality, (if not drawn aside by artificial doctrine,) runs with fresh alacrity to *its common duties*: and should they be such as thoroughly to engage the intellect, still in every interval it breathes forth

desire, complaint, if not rather love and praise and hope: it remembers its Lord and its true home, and gains new strength to do and receive all in His name. Rule, habit, or lingering superstition, chiefly or alone, seem then to send a man to formal and set prayer: for he has a more continuous and involuntary worship. His Sun goes not down, be his day serene or stormy. As he walks the streets, as he enters company, as he changes his occupation, his inward spirit gazes upon his Eternal Friend, and is glad, even if his lips frame no word, nor his intellect any clear proposition. The Spirit itself pleadeth within him, perhaps in inarticulate utterances, until some new and deep want reveals itself in his soul, and a fresh series of prayer begins. One thing only is essential to his devotion,—that he shall be quite unobserved: and this very thing is sometimes not easy to secure in his own church and his well-known seat: to make up for which disadvantage (as regards Prayer at least) some signal benefit ought to be enjoyed there. As to private devotions, it certainly is not to be denied that there are cases (known to each man) when he extremely covets to prolong them. By all means let him freely follow his own spiritual instinct: “Is any afflicted? let him pray: is any merry? let him sing psalms.” But when *long* Devotions are *not* cried out for by the soul itself, they are deadening and tend to hypocrisy. In fact, some men’s worst temptations rise out of such times; action and company is the healthiest state for

them, except when the soul is carried into prayer as by a vehement flood. For church-rulers to prescribe long Prayer, (as many would now wish,) when they cannot give the Spirit of Prayer, would be tyrannizing in the dark.

4. In regard to Special Prayer Meetings, little need be here said. It is obvious that their value must depend upon the harmony of soul with soul. In theory and in the abstract I regard them as blessed companies : but they demand mutual trust, perfect unsuspicion, a common and a pure enthusiasm. There is in them a revelation of soul, by which holiness may become as it were contagious, but which *may* make them intensely painful or very injurious. *Corruptio optimi est pessimum.* The time may be in store, when social worship shall ordinarily be a real outpouring of soul : but an immense revolution of opinion, and yet more of heart, must take place first.

5. But the Sermon! Can any one say a word against this? Is not this at length the "means of grace?"—Reader, must I ask whether thou hast ever heard a bad sermon? one so dull and drowsy, that it was impossible to maintain attention : one so empty, that no food for heart or mind could be found in it : one so logical, that the soul was never addressed at all, but only the critical faculty called out : one so illogical, that the hearer's Understanding violently resents it and will not leave his Soul free to feed on the good food which is intermixed : one so uncharitable, as to turn the heart sick : one so full of gross

oarnal superstition, as to excite indignation, that Paganism and Formalism still live to vex us: one so vulgar, coarse and profane in the manner of address, as to spoil good matter: one which makes Atheism seem preferable to Theism, by painting the Holy and All Merciful as an Omnipotent Devil who insists on being complimented? Under all these things, I, Oh Reader, have groaned a hundred times: perhaps thou hast not. They are to me no small counterweight to the benefits of hearing sermons, because unfortunately I cannot make the preacher say or leave out what I choose; and practically that is what we all want (*more or less*) to do. But let this pass, and suppose we have got a perfect preacher,—one of a thousand; and what then?

Obviously and clearly, the preaching of such men is, more than all other causes together, a means of spiritual awakening,—of conversion from sin and of stimulating to an independent active life in the spirit. God forbid that I write one word to depreciate the exertions of our truest aids and champions. The great pity is, that they are so few, and that the same man is often so unequal to himself. However, not every pious and wise person makes a good preacher, profitable to hearers in every stage; and it is absurd to treat it as a personal slight, if one does not get benefit from somebody's sermons. Nay, there are those who will retort: "It is your own fault: go on *until* you find advantage from it,"—as the quack puffs off his pills. The fact is

that sermon-hearing is regarded as an end and not merely as a means; an *opus operatum*, as in the old Sacraments. Was the minister eager for his own honour, and not for my welfare, when he was not satisfied by my assurance that I found private meditation, with an occasional book or a walk in the fields, so profitable, that I had no longings after his discourse? No: but there was at the bottom of his mind the assumption, that there is some abstract *duty* in hearing sermons, as if they were an end in themselves. On the contrary, it would seem that we *ought* all to grow up towards a state, in which we care less and less for human teaching, or rather, come to select our own aids, in the form of books. In the first stage of spiritual life, we are as infants, fed by the nurse's hand: but gradually, we ought to learn to feed ourselves. And so indeed of common education. The teacher is essential to children and desirable for youths; but to keep the full-grown man under tuition would blight all intellectual fruit: nay, the whole use of higher teaching is, to call forth and stimulate personal energies, in order that the hearer may very shortly need teaching no more. Occasional listening to a preacher will always be more or less coveted; but it is very hurtful to imagine that we *all always* want a "regular ministry" to teach us. Nothing is more desirable for those who are already fully fledged, than that each should be driven out from the nest to seek his own food by soaring through God's wide heaven, in

stead of huddling together, as now, with closed wings, on the flat earth, gaping for morsels of meat, killed and cooked by another. When that other, who is the sole teacher, is, over and above, younger than many who are to be taught,—younger too in spiritual age,—the absurdity becomes so manifest, that people betake themselves to the plea, that we ought to attend “for example’s sake.” But this, however well occasionally, degenerates into a very hollow system, when it becomes habitual.

Are there then *no* aids to higher spiritual progress, to be obtained from other men? Undoubtedly there are. It is not requisite to speak of intercourse by word of mouth with good men; which, by reason of our shyness and dread of hypocrisy or its appearance, is perhaps ordinarily less profitable even between friends, than it admits of being made. But the two inexhaustible sources of spiritual supply and stimulus, are Hymns for private recitation and Books: both having this in common, that the Soul is *active, and selects from them what it pleases*, in which they differ from all the preceding. The peculiarity of Hymns consists in their being adapted to rest in the memory. Hence they are available for those who cannot read; moreover, and even for one who can, they are of first-rate importance, because they accompany him everywhere, in darkness or light, at home or abroad. Historians judge the sentiments of a nation from its Ballads: much more is the devotion of a Church



cognizable from its favourite Hymns. Well might Paul advise the Ephesians and Colossians to "teach and admonish one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in their hearts to the Lord." The traveller in his idle hours, the loiterer whom an unpunctual friend disappoints, the invalid who wakes in the night, every man in his odd minutes, who does not find holy thought to come unbidden,—yet if the memory be stored with hymns selected by the soul's own preference, gets in them a soothing or elevating stimulus, as his case may require. Hymns are in fact the truest links that bind ancient and modern souls in one. Many of the Hebrew Psalms, or parts of Prophecies, have inspired pure hearts in every age. In modern times, great numbers of sweet and touching hymns have been composed by unlettered persons, whose tasks were solitary and silent. Our own language is rich in them, but in German (I understand) they abound still more, and are in versification far from despicable. Not that elegance of form is essential to a hymn: the use of the metre is to facilitate memory, and if there be nothing in its composition to give positive offence, this is literary merit sufficient.—Hymns can scarcely become logical \* and dry; hence they have a *primâ*

\* I have met some offensive instances; but they are extremely rare. A highly Calvinistic hymn-composer has written:

"If one believer can be lost,  
It follows, so can all."

*facie* superiority for nourishing the soul, to prose books: and on the whole, there is nothing to compare to them in this department.

But inasmuch as some cultivation of the moral intellect is essential for spiritual progress, and some general cultivation of the mind is extremely desirable, Prose Works have their own place, as eminent spiritual aids. But it is needless to say a word more on a subject which everybody so well appreciates.

What then is the sum of this argument? That our first want, is, the expansion of *individual* life. We need to see and know something for ourselves, and to learn to feed ourselves spiritually. To be dependent, is hardly to live. What would it avail, to believe *on the authority* of some one whom I respected, that my nature is weak, or that I myself have sinned? that there is a God, or that he desires my moral perfection? Such second-hand conviction is not Faith, and would produce none of the energetic results of Faith: the ancients\* would have compared it to a drunken man gabbling the moral verses of Empedocles. We need more of *Nature* in the soul; that is, a reverting to first principles, a developement of primitive instincts, and some increased confidence that there still lives a God to hear and teach us. Never shall we by mere herding together, or by leaning on authority old or new,

\* Aristot. Nic. Eth. lib. vii.

make up for intrinsic weakness in each separate soul. It is only by insight into the Present, that we can understand the Past. In political history and in all physical science this is acknowledged. One who knows nothing of the existing forces, in States or in unorganized Nature, cannot rightly discuss past events. So, if *a chasm* be gratuitously assumed between the spiritual action which we know and experience, and that which animated apostles and prophets,—or, what comes to the same thing, if we know nothing of any spiritual forces at all within ourselves,—we shall for ever be in the dark concerning their minds and souls. But with more Individuality, more Independence of man, there will be more capacity to learn of God. Then we shall not aim (in theory, any more than in practice) to become little Christs or little Pauls; we shall as freely disclaim it, as in literature the becoming little Homers. Such imitation, all know, does not tend to excellence, but to stupidity. Men of little faith fix their eyes on the Past, as did the Scribes and Pharisees: Faith gratefully and reverently acknowledges *and uses* the Past, but sets her face towards the Future. Those who build the tombs of the prophets, but alledge that all inspiration is now closed, would in former days probably have aided to persecute them: those, on the other hand, who use individual prophets only as aids towards the Eternal Source of prophecy, are the true imitators of those holy men. Let the songs of praise or of

spiritual complaint, which the pious of past ages have bequeathed to us, nourish our spirits and link us to them. Let us hope and seek that the life of God may be in us, as it was in them, a guide into truth and an energy for action: then shall our daily work be daily joy, and we shall eat angels' food.

## PART V.

### HOPES CONCERNING FUTURE LIFE.

ONE of the earliest speculations forced on the Soul during its infancy, related to a state after Death. The mysterious question, *Whence came we?* necessarily suggests that other, *Whither go we?* but the attempt to give an intelligent reply does not in the first instance come from the Soul, but from the inventive and superficial Fancy. Owing to the constant association of Body and Soul during life, the Soul is supposed to go with the Body beneath the earth, and the idea of a Hades or Tartarus is generated. When either the Understanding or the Moral Faculties begin to be more unfolded, a great change soon takes place in the views held on that whole subject.

The most celebrated attempts to establish by means of argument a doctrine concerning the Soul's immortality, come down from the school of Plato ; which, with various modifications, have been reproduced in modern days. There is no agreement among minds capable of appreciating these arguments, as to their validity. Metaphysical philosophers on the whole maintain them ; a majority of

physiologists, and nearly all unphilosophical but not unintelligent Christians, reject them. To me the discussion loses all interest, from the fact that it is not addressed to the Soul, but to the pure Intellect, and is consequently unintelligible to the vulgar. But this remark needs to be expanded.

Not Plato's celebrated discourse merely, but every modern attempt in the same direction (as far as I know) appeals only to facts of which the spiritual and unspiritual have equal cognizance, and uses arguments of (good or bad) logic, in estimating which the Soul is at liberty to be asleep or non-existent. We are told of the contrast of Mind and Matter, and that Mind *cannot* perish by reason of the dissolution of the body: and much more of the same kind. That such statements and reasonings have ever seemed to me an unmeaning jargon backed by extravagantly bad logic, may arise from my own obtuseness; however that may be, they are (if correct) truths of pure Science and in no respect doctrines of Religion. To judge of their accuracy, requires, not a pure Conscience and a loving Soul, but a clear and calm Head; hence to go wrong about them does not indicate a religiously defective state, but a weak or muddled understanding. Now it is self-refuting to treat the doctrine as one of high religious importance, and yet to confess that those in whom the religious faculties are most developed may be far more liable to err concerning it than those who have no religious faculty in action at

all\*. On the contrary, concerning truths which are really spiritual it is an obvious axiom, that "he who is spiritual judgeth all things, and he himself is judged of no man." This objection is so decisive, and apparently so obvious to the feelings of the soul, that one might have fancied no spiritual man could for an instant have felt religious interest in such arguments.

Very different was the history of thought among the Hebrew people, although it started with a primitive conception of the Underworld, not sensibly different from the Greek Hades. But when prophecy had been developed, and pure moral reverence had supplanted crude imagination, all hard ideas concerning a ghostly or rather material soul seem to have vanished, and the Underworld remained only as poetical imagery. Thus one Royal Psalmist pointedly avows that the dead can neither praise nor hope in God; and other unknown yet powerful writers harp on the same sad note†. Modern divines might seem to be incarnations of selfishness, if they were judged of by the fatuous doctrine, which teaches

\* Christians have added an argument of their own for a Future State, but unfortunately one that cannot bring personal comfort or assurance. A Future State (it seems) is requisite to *redress the inequalities of this life*. And can I go to the Supreme Judge, and tell him that I deserve more happiness than he has granted me in this life? Whither is the logician's common-sense or self-knowledge gone?

† Isaiah xxxviii. 18, 19. Psalm cxv. 17; lxxxviii. 10-12. Eccles. iii. 19.

that all religion (perhaps all morality) is wrecked, if immortality be lost. According to this, Conscience is presumed to be non-existent, and Prudence to be the sole stimulus to action. The generous feelings of man, the love of Virtue for its own sake, and much more the love of God, are ignored; and it is sagely remarked, that such romantic principles will never take effect on the vulgar, who, if they are to be religious, must have a *quid pro quo*. And thus men who call themselves spiritual teachers—(all happily are not such)—degrade religion into a prudential regard for our interests after death. The mischief done by this selfish view in all its ramifications, would need a treatise to set forth. If the Christian belief of immortality, as a *pure intellectual dogma*, has had any beneficial effect, it is in a very different way. Namely, by ascribing *One* element of infinity to individual man, it gives him a contact, appreciable to the pure intellect, with Him who is *All* infinite; and thus allures the human soul to seek fellowship and friendship with that Eternal Spirit. But to return to the Hebrews. We do not find all their Psalmists equally desponding concerning the soul's futurity; and if it were possible to ascertain the dates of the 16th, 17th, and 49th Psalms, it might have some historical interest. In these we read, not indeed any abstract dogmas, but personal aspirations in a tone of confidence, based upon the soul's own love to God and knowledge of Him.

Ps. xvi. 8. 11: "I have set the Lord always be-



fore me: because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore my heart is glad, and my vitals rejoice: my flesh also shall rest in hope. For thou wilt not leave my soul in the underworld, nor suffer thy saint to see corruption. Thou wilt show me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy, and at thy right hand are pleasures for evermore."

Ps. xvii. 5. "As for me, I shall \* behold thy face in righteousness; I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy likeness."

Ps. xlix. 14, 15. "Like sheep they are laid in the grave; Death shall feed upon them; . . . . . but God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave; for he will receive me."

There may be some other passages of the same tendency, but none that rest on any different basis. The soul, conscious of a certain union with God, is thereby excited to the hope (more or less confident) that that union shall never terminate: and the peculiarity of such a view is, that the *argument* (if one may use the phrase) is utterly inappreciable to the mere acute logician: it is foolishness to him, "because it is spiritually discerned." This is as it should be. Can a Mathematician understand Physiology, or a Physiologist questions of Law? A true love of God in the soul itself, an insight into Him depending on that love, and a hope rising out of that insight, are prerequisite for contemplating this

\* I observe that Ewald translates it, *Möge*—! Oh might I behold!

spiritual doctrine, which is a spontaneous impression on the gazing soul, powerful (perhaps) in proportion to its Faith; whereas all the grounds of belief proposed to the mere understanding, have nothing to do with Faith at all.

When we turn to the New Testament,—(where the doctrine of the saints' immortality, *as a fact*, is unquestionable,)—to ask for the ground and root of the belief, we find Paul, as usual, the fullest source of knowledge, because of the various unfolding of his mind in his numerous authentic epistles. Yet this doctrine has two sides with him,—one connected with the Resurrection of Christ, and one more obviously based on the older Hebrew view. Each will need some notice here.

The 15th chapter of the 1st epistle to the Corinthians, is the well known passage in which he elaborately develops the idea, elsewhere familiar to him, that Christian hope of immortality essentially depends on the Resurrection and Ascension of Christ. In modern days it has been understood as follows: "The resurrection of Jesus was an external miracle designed to prove both the *power* of God to raise the dead, and his fixed *intention* so to do:" Paul however can hardly have meant this. If he had looked on the resurrection of Christ as Paley or Priestley did, as a miracle to be proved only by testimony, he would have anxiously gathered up and collated that testimony in an authentic form; he would have given the names of the 500 brethren who witnessed it; in short, his first business must

have been to fix, at their earliest source, the fluctuating testimonies, before they became diluted and worthless. This he must have done, if his notions of logic had anything in common with the school of Paley. On the contrary, he cared nothing for Christ "*after the flesh*," but sought acquaintance with Him as a living ascended Lord: he tells the Galatians (among the proofs of his independent apostleship) that he carefully kept clear of the eleven at his first conversion, and received his gospel of God alone. For when it pleased God to call him by His grace and reveal His Son *in him*, immediately Paul conferred not with flesh and blood, neither went he up to Jerusalem to those which were apostles before him; but went into Arabia; and preached Christ three years before he met any of the Apostles \*. It is clear that Paul regarded himself to have *adequate* grounds for believing the resurrection of Christ, quite independent of human witness, and that he (in a certain sense) prided himself on that independency. It seems evident that to doubt the resurrection of Messiah was to him an intrinsic absurdity: he believed in it from Prophecy, and from its own propriety, or from personal revelations. Messiah was to be Judge of Living and Dead; and how *could* such a one be holden by death? The Corinthians, in denying the resurrection, could never (he was certain) have intended anything so monstrous as that Christ was not risen. Here then

\* Galat. i. 11-19.

came in the Pauline doctrine of Head and Members: if Christ lives, his people shall live also.—Now this is an appeal, not to the logician, but to the spiritual heart. He does not argue for something which a jury of physicians and surgeons might be summoned to decide, as Paley might seem to think: but it is really the old Hebrew view under a new phraseology, only the name of Christ standing in the place of God. While an Asaph or a Heman would have said: “Jehovah lives for ever, and I am his servant: He is my God and my portion: therefore I shall live in Him:” and where Jesus says: “God was the God of Abraham; but He is not the God of the dead, but of the living; for all live to Him:” Paul puts it thus: “Messiah was to triumph over the grave, and to say, O Death, where is thy sting? Since then Messiah could not be holden of death, but is risen, I, who am a member of his mystical body, must rise also.” And this may suffice as introduction to the other side of his view.

That a purely *historical* is as unsatisfactory as a *metaphysical* basis for a spiritual doctrine, is obvious; indeed, Paul gives us clearly to understand that the future hopes of the soul were to be discerned by the soul itself, for itself, and did not depend upon man's wisdom, as a question of history does and must. “Eye hath not seen, (says he, 1 Cor. ii. 9, &c.,) nor ear heard, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him; *but God hath revealed them to us by his Spirit*; for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, even the deep

things of God. *Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we may know those things which are freely given to us of God.*" It is evident that under the word *we* he includes more than his single self; at least all whom he had above called *adults*, as opposed to *babes* in Christ: in fact he never claims an inspiration differing in kind from other faithful Christians. Thus in his judgment, those in whom the Spirit of God becomes vigorous and casts out the spirit of the world, gain an eye to see the unseen joys which God has prepared for those who love Him.

There is another interesting passage which throws light on the processes of Paul's mind. "The Spirit itself (says he, Rom. viii. 16, 17) beareth witness with our spirit that we are children of God." So far, we have a fact, resting on the direct knowledge of the soul itself: but he proceeds to argue (it seems) with the logical intellect:—"And *if* children, *then* heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ; if so be that [*or*, seeing that?] we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified together." All seems now clear. He had (as far as he here tells us) no direct perception of anything farther than that he was a "child" of God, and from this he *inferred* that he was to be "an heir" of God, that is, was to be a member of the future kingdom of Messiah of which all the prophets had spoken.

Paul however may have had more of direct in-

sight into this deepest of subjects than the passage last quoted denotes : God forbid that I should presumptuously limit the insight enjoyed by his most favoured servants. Yet his light does us little or no good, while it is a light outside of us ; so long, we are depending on the soundness of Paul's faculties. If he in any way confused the conclusions of his logic (which is often extremely inconsequent and mistaken) with the perceptions of his divinely illuminated soul, our belief might prove baseless. Faith by proxy is really no Faith at all, and certainly is not what Paul would ever have recommended. Our real question then is not, what he believed ; but how far he gives us either aid or materials for exerting a Faith of our own.

Such remarks, I fear, may be felt as exceedingly painful by those who are accustomed to imagine a fixed logical dogma on this subject to be of first-rate importance, and even of necessity : but a little reflection as to the high tone of spiritual elevation maintained by the Hebrew bards, ought to suffice to show that that "necessity" is extremely exaggerated. But this is not all. Need we ask what sort of influence the current views exert over the irreligious ? Are they less profane, for the dreadful doctrine of the Eternal Hell ? Are not men also driven into a self-righteous belief, that they in some sense deserve heavenly glory, merely because they cannot feel that they deserve the awful alternative which alone is treated as possible ? Again, if it be said that the fixed doctrine comforts us on the loss of pious

relatives, it is forgotten what distress it inflicts on those whose near kinsfolk die without clear marks of piety? This proves nothing as to truth or falsehood, but when people allow themselves to be influenced by the *expediency* and *desirableness* of the current doctrine, it is not fair to take a partial view of the case.

Some however will say:—"We discard the idea of Judgment and Punishment: but we still desire to retain the immortality of the righteous, as an external dogma, because of the extreme importance of this as consolation and support in the prospect of death and in other times of trial."—That a firm belief of immortality, *rising out of insight*, must have very energetic force, I regard as an axiom; but *as an external dogma* I cannot but think that its efficacy is prodigiously overrated. In this connection it is not egotistical to speak of myself. Seventeen or eighteen years ago I was to all appearance dying of fever. I firmly believed (if belief at secondhand can be firm) that a blessed immortality, guaranteed by the resurrection and word of Christ, was about to open upon me; yet so feeble was the effect of this belief, that it gave me not one throb of joy: calm resignation to an inevitable but unwelcome event, and thankfulness to that merciful Love which had revealed itself to my spirit, were my highest emotions.—But I will refer to another; a pure and passionate soul; living, breathing and moving in divine things; ever rejoicing in union with God in Christ, in theory anticipating eternal

Glory; and yet to my most certain knowledge, most thoroughly unwilling to die prematurely. This is only what may be expected from a faith on hearsay, however much the person would be shocked at being thought not truly to believe.

But do I then deny a future life, or seek to undermine a belief of it? Most assuredly not: but I would put the belief (whether it is to be weaker or firmer) on a spiritual basis, and on none other. It seems to me a sort of first principle, that such a belief cannot justly rise out of anything but insight into God's mind, gained by a full sympathy of our spirit with God's Spirit. What we *see* at one time, we may *remember* at another, and such intellectual remembrance is of importance; yet it is not the same thing, and is exceedingly inferior in energy, being intellectual only, not spiritual. The same applies to the report brought to us of what others have discerned: it serves to animate us to open our eyes and gaze after the same sight, but does not supersede our personal vision. Nevertheless, I never knew any one who professed to have attained (by spiritual insight) certain or confident expectations in this matter; there is indeed a dubious passage in Paul, which perhaps will express prevalent feelings: "We are saved by *hope*: but *hope which is seen, is not hope*; for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it." Rom. viii. 24, 25.—Just before he had said: "Hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is



shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given to us." Rom. v. 5. He cannot go without the inward witness, and does not really rest on dogma. If we farther ask, what is the inward creed of each faithful soul, it will possibly be found to bear a witness not very different from the following.

The Soul which is wedded to its Infinite Lord, knows there is no presumption in thinking that he cares for it. Day by day, and hour by hour, it tells out its complaints, its wants, its thoughts, its hopes, mixed with the sweet breath of praise or the sigh of dim longings, all understood by Him. Yea, He who searcheth the heart knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, which pleadeth for the saint according to the will of God. In all this the Soul may have, and perhaps must have, some sorrow, yet that very sorrow is sweet and sacred, and she would not part with it: thus joy mounts up over sorrow, and is increased by means of it. The very consciousness of blessedness excites a desire for prolonged existence; and especially if danger or sickness brings death near, a greater earnestness of thought arises concerning the future. Some may even have anxiety and intense desire: but most, I suppose, have a certain yearning, that (if possible) their union with God may be made perpetual; that is, not merely commensurate with earthly life, but stretching out beyond into a real eternity; and the very possibility of such a thing, (not as imposed on the intellect, but as apprehended by the soul,) stimulates every holy effort. Faith also appears to gain an ever increasing

confidence in the good will of God to perfect us more and more ; and it is very wholesome to nourish this expectation : for even when we are most tempted and weakest, we instantly become strong, if we can believe that he means to make us strong. Herein we discern some probability, (increasing with the strength of that Faith,) that the highest state which the soul here reaches, is not and cannot be meant by God as its ultimate and absolutely highest ; but that his work begun in it must needs go on towards perfection, unchecked by the limit which we call Death. Undoubtedly, if we reason from the analogies of organic nature, we shall come to an opposite conclusion ; but spiritual action in many respects is quite peculiar, and especially in this, that we cannot conceive of God as tying himself (so to say) by general laws, so as to deal otherwise with *this* soul than He would have done if it had been the only soul in the universe. In organic life, we often suffer pain or loss, from the mere operation of general laws which take no cognizance of our moral state : that, I say, we cannot imagine to happen as to spiritual life. Hence no *à priori* disproof is felt from the arguments of physiology : it remains as a thing not manifestly refused by God. For this therefore, from time to time, the Spirit within pleads, and knows that it will be accepted in asking, even if the prayer be ignorant. But unless some clear conviction can be gained, that the thing asked is *according to the will of God*, the soul cannot have confidence that the petition will be fulfilled ; and to

ascertain this by direct vision, is (to me hitherto) impossible: for to our blind eyes many things seem easy, which Almighty wisdom knows cannot be granted; and while the intellect hesitates on this point, the soul dares not to dogmatize. Confidence thus there is none, and Aspiration is her highest state. But then, there is herein nothing whatever to distress her: no cloud of grief crosses the area of her vision, as she gazes upward: for *if her Lord, infinite in love and wisdom, sees that it cannot be, she herself could not wish it.* While in such vigour of life as to have any insight into God's mind, she is also in vigour enough to trample selfishness under foot. In fact, it would not be selfish merely, but silly, to fret, that odd cannot be even, nor a creature be as its Creator; and nothing short of difficulty insuperable as this, would lead to the refusal of so holy and simple a desire.

The general conclusion to which I personally come, is, that the state of *Aspiration* to which alone I attain, is perhaps the very best thing for me, until some other conditions of soul are fulfilled, in which as yet I am deficient. If selfishness mixes unduly in my desires, might not a greater certainty (especially one impressed from without) benumb the outgoings of the spirit; just as human love is easily sated and flags, if it be not pure, as well as strong? The Honourable Robert Boyle somewhere says quaintly: "I hold a piece of meat to my dog, that he may jump at it; and the higher he jumps, the higher I hold it, to make him jump the more:

even so does God hold out beyond our reach the soul's true aliment, eternal glory," &c. If the principle here hinted at be sound, a clear prospect of eternity would seem to be the last reward reserved by God for faithful souls; imparted then, but only then, when He sees that it could not produce lapses into unconcern, irreverent self-conceit, with all its train of abominations, or foolish and wrong neglect of earthly interests. But in the same proportion to our hopes concerning self, are our hopes concerning all spiritually enlightened souls; all that are capable of obeying and rejoicing in God: and we have concerning them precisely the same comfort as concerning ourselves. If we can happily cast our own souls on Him who careth for us, there is surely no greater difficulty in so trusting Him for all who are dearest to us. Meanwhile, nothing but mischief can come from speculating how he will *punish* others; which really amounts to sitting in judgment over them ourselves, as though we could read the heart, and could measure sin and temptation. Let us not repine that we get no answer to the questions, Are there few that shall be saved? and, What shall come to yonder man? but suffice it, ourselves to live with God now, if haply we may live with Him to all eternity: or at any rate, let us love Him while we live, and live only to be conformed to His will. For if an eternity of holy obedience is infinite bliss, it can only be because every day of obedience is bliss. We therefore do not need the promise of such an eternity, as any bribe to

induce us to be obedient and loving now : but either Heaven is an empty name and foolish delusion, or it is a Heaven on Earth to be God's true servants. In any case therefore it remains, to rest our souls on a faithful Creator, knowing that whether we live, we live unto Him, or whether we die, we die unto Him. Living therefore or dying, we are His.

## PART VI.

### PROSPECTS OF CHRISTIANITY.

IN the course of the last hundred years, the Christian name has begun to extend itself over many barbarous tribes : first over the Greenlanders, by Moravian missionaries, since then, as a result of the unparalleled naval power of England, over many islands in the Pacific, and in certain parts of South and West Africa. But over the old regions of India and Arabia it has evidently but little power ; and what is most startling of all, its prospects in Europe itself are externally darker than ever. In Spain, Italy, France and Germany, it is hard to say that much belief of formal Christianity remains among the more educated part of the community, or to guess how deep a gross and fearful unbelief has penetrated among the lowest population of the towns. As for England and Scotland, it is notorious that a horrid heathenism has taken firm root in our town population also, and that millions have cast off all reverence for any of the claims of authoritative religion. Facts so widely spread over the face of Europe cannot be lightly treated. Churches are built, but that class does not come to them which has cast off the Christian yoke : ministers may be sent to seek

them out, but it must not be hastily assumed that they will be successful: hitherto, experience is the other way, and the causes of spiritual difficulty deserve analysis.

The causes appear to me to be identical with those which encounter Christian missionaries in dealing with acute Hindoos or Mohammedans; namely, the unmanageable character of what are called *Christian Evidences*. The demands made on men's faith are indeed far greater than ever the Apostles made; for the Apostles did not take a Bible in their hands, and say to the heathen, "Here is an infallible Book: to believe that every word of this is dictated by God, is the beginning of Christianity: receive this, and you shall be saved." But now, although our teachers do not all assent heartily to this way of preaching the Gospel, yet few have strength of mind or plainness enough to disown it: and this claim of *Mechanical Inspiration* enables every bold and sharp-witted man to carry on an offensive war against the Christian teacher, who will soon find that he has more than enough to do in repelling the infinite objections to which he lies open. The war is thus carried away from the region of the Conscience and of the Soul into that of verbal and other criticism; and who can expect spiritual conversion from that?

But this is only the beginning of difficulty. *Doctrine* also has been built up into a system which aims at, but cannot attain, logical exactness. I need not enter into any questions of detail, and I barely hint at the Trinity and Incarnation, the Immaculate Con-

ception (of Jesus), the Pelagian controversy, and other matters which divide Arminians and Calvinists. No one, I think, can read the New Testament with fresh eyes, and not be struck by the fact, that the Apostles never encountered practical difficulty from the heathen or from the Jews on these points. There is not the slightest mark that they were assailed as polytheists or as contradicting themselves. It is evident that they did not hold as essential to Christianity any exact system of logical doctrine, which the opponent could attack as illogical. To recognise the authority and headship of Jesus as Messiah, was all that they expected of a convert; and this, not in connexion with any authoritative book that professed to set forth his words as an absolute law of truth. At least, during Paul's labours no such book existed. The convert gladly learned all the wise and holy thoughts which Paul had to impart; but while trusting his "private judgment" so far as to leave the faith of his fathers for Christianity, it did not occur to him to commit an act of moral suicide, by promising thenceforward to have no judgment of his own, but to believe every thing that Paul told him.

There is no book in all the world which I love and esteem so much as the New Testament, with the devotional parts of the Old. There is none which I know so intimately, none which dwells so close to me in my dearest and most sacred thoughts, none for which I so thank God, none on which my soul and heart have been to so great an extent moulded. In



my earliest boyhood it was my private delight and daily companion : to it I owe the best part of whatever wisdom there is in my manhood ; and I expect it to be a joy to me in death. Yet after thirty years' study of it, I deliberately before God and man protest against the attempt to make it a law to men's understanding, conscience or soul ; and am assuredly convinced that the deepest spiritual mischief has occurred to the Churches,—nothing short of a stifling of the Spirit of God (with few intervals) for seventeen centuries and a half,—from taking the Bible (or New Testament), instead of God himself, as our source of inspiration. Paul certainly did not contemplate this. "Who then is Paul, or who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye have believed?" Paul was an inspired man ; but, in his view, so was Timothy, Philemon, Onesimus ; so was the meanest Christian who was faithful. Inspiration was not infallibility, nor did it consist in guaranteeing to them the contents of a book. That the *writings* of the Apostles were more peculiarly inspired than their *spoken words*, is a fiction invented in modern times for the service of controversy : while that the one and the other alike were not only fallible but sometimes erroneous, an unprejudiced examination presently shows. The interpretations of the Old Testament given in the New are very frequently fanciful and mistaken ; and the expectation of Christ's speedy return in the clouds of Heaven to bring about the general judgment, is a manifest error which pervades the whole New Testament. When will men leave off

the attempt to serve God by a lie ? To varnish over these and other plain facts in zeal for God, can only issue in confusion to our own work and damage to true religion. A calm consideration will presently show one who is not tied up from thinking, that as Paul or John might err in astronomy or geology, so might they in history or logic or metaphysics : nay, that they necessarily held all the metaphysics of their own age, without knowing that they did. In communion with God, their souls imbibed many holy feelings, and put forth holy actions ; and their reflective intellect shaped, into what we call Doctrine, the perceptions of their spirits. Unless the intellectual and logical processes had been infallible, (of which we have clear evidence before us to the contrary,) the resulting propositions could not be divine and absolute truth, even if the inspiration were the highest possible to human nature ; and when *they* did not encumber their Gospel with such pretensions, or elaborate an exact system of Divinity as a target for the enemy, it is gratuitous in their modern followers to do this.

But let us suppose these two burdens cut away from the shoulders of the Christian champion. He does not desire to make the New Testament a law to the mind, nor has he any Corpus of Divinity which he needs to uphold in entirety ; he advances as lightly equipped as Priestley himself :—what may we now expect from the True Theologian, when he attacks sin and vice and gross unspirituality among our neglected masses ? If we form an *à priori*

conception of the genuine champion of the Gospel from the New Testament, we shall say, that he is girt with the only sword of the Spirit, the living word of God, which pierces to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart. In his hands it is as lightning from God, kindled from the Spirit within him, and piercing through the unbeliever's soul, convincing his conscience of sin, and striking him to the ground before God ; until those who believe, receive it, not as the word of man, but as, what it is in truth, the word of God. Its action is directly upon the conscience and upon the soul ; and hence its wonderful results ; not on the critical faculties, upon which the Spirit is powerless. Such at least was Paul's weapon for fighting the Lord's battles.—But when the modern battle commences, what do we see ? A study-table spread over with books, ancient and modern ; a gentleman consulting dictionaries and grammars ; referring to Tacitus and Pliny ; engaged in establishing that Josephus is a credible and not a credulous writer ; inquiring whether the Greek of the Apocalypse and of the fourth gospel can have come from the same hand ; searching through Justin Martyr and Irenæus, in order to find out whether the gospels are a growth by accretion and modification, or were originally struck off as we now read them ; comparing Philo or Plotinus with John and Paul ; in short, we find him engaged (with much or little success) in praiseworthy efforts at Local History, Criticism of

Texts, History of Philosophy, Logic, (or the Theory of Evidence,) Physiology, Demonology, and other important but very difficult studies; all inappreciable to the unlearned, all remote from the sphere in which the Soul operates. And are these abstruse arguments the powerful and living word of God? Is it not extravagant to call inquiries of this sort "spiritual," or to expect any spiritual results from them? When the spiritual man (as such) cannot judge, the question is removed into a totally different court from that of the Soul, the court of the critical understanding. Nay, the Soul *may* not choose by her own instincts; it is a dishonesty to allow likes and dislikes to operate; calm indifference is required, not impulses *for* or *against* alledged historical events: the question is one of external evidence. How then can the state of the Soul be tested, by the conclusion to which the Intellect is led? What means the anathematizing those who remain unconvinced? And how can it be imagined that the Lord of the Soul cares more about a Historical than about a Geological, Metaphysical or Mathematical argument? The processes of thought have nothing to quicken the conscience or affect the soul. More words are surely not wanted, to show the intense opposition of all this to the Gospel as conceived of by St. Paul.

I have already had occasion to remark, how entirely independent of external evidence Paul felt himself to be, when he preached for three years without caring to meet the apostles, whose *senses*

could give the best external witness to the resurrection of Jesus: and that he thus kept aloof from them, he many years after deliberately boasted, as among the proofs that his gospel and his apostleship came direct from God. I see not how to doubt, that he would have looked on an apparatus of learned evidences with the same contempt as on his Rabbinical books, and would have pronounced them all to be dross and dung. He would at all hazards have refused these weapons; for Saul's armour must needs encumber David. Nay, he would have espoused the cause of these modern Gentiles, who are so often "without God in the world," and for their sake would have vindicated a Gospel free from the embarrassments of critical erudition, level to their capacities,—or rather, addressed to the Soul; which is often as active and susceptible in the poorest and most illiterate as in the wise and great. What means *now* the declaration, Unto the poor the Gospel is preached? and what the boast,—I came not unto you with excellency of speech, or of man's learning? For concerning our modern Evidences, the poor and the illiterate cannot possibly judge, and the preacher cannot preach unless he is learned: so entirely has the Gospel shifted away from its primitive basis. And then, can we wonder that it is wholly bereft of its power to convince unbelievers?

Another important result of this unscriptural and unspiritual system is seen in the Christian Ministry. A Minister in modern days is expected to excel

others in what are called Theological accomplishments. Theology, one might have thought, was the Science of God; but no: it is the sciences of Biblical Interpretation and Historical Criticism. A person eminent in these becomes a Doctor of Divinity,—Sanctæ Theologiæ Professor. And yet these are topics, in which a man might obtain high ecclesiastical renown, though his conscience were seared and his soul utterly paralyzed. Though by courtesy called spiritual, the knowledge is simply secular; and an immediate result of it is, that *youth*, however unspiritual, if only the critical and logical faculties have been developed, steps into the chair of the Christian teacher, and becomes ecclesiastically higher than *age* however spiritually exercised. Christianity has been turned into a LITERATURE, and therefore her teachers necessarily become a literary Profession. Previous to Ordination, they may be subjected to some literary ordeal, they may also be required to profess orthodoxy and to be morally respectable; but this is all that can be attempted in a public system. Thus in result, a national clergy cannot be expected to excel ordinary Christians in any spiritual qualities, but only in learning. How then can they be expected to exert any high spiritual influence? Many Dissenters imagine that this evil is caused by the Union of Church and State; but the same evils appear in their Academies and Churches: naturally not so glaringly, and yet in substance as truly. Age and spiritual experience are, with them also, subordinate

to critical cultivation; and plainly because, with them also, Christianity is become a Literature.

How opposed this is to every thing in primitive Christianity, not Paul alone testifies. By every writer of the New Testament it is manifestly presumed that the historical and logical faculties have nothing to do with *that* faith, which is distinctive of God's people. Every where it is either stated or implied that the Soul or Spirit of man is alone concerned in receiving or rejecting God's revelation. Unless we can recover this position, we have lost the essential *spirit* of apostolic doctrine; and then, by holding to the *form*, we do but tie ourselves to a dead carcass, which may poison us and disgust mankind.

To *keep* and to *get* Historical Faith, are different problems. He who has been educated in it and never has lost it, throws the burden of disproof upon others: he believes, till some refutation is shown him. Hence mere indolence of mind suffices to keep him in his father's (historical) faith: and without any such indolence, he is generally kept in it, if he have any keen feelings of the spiritual glories of Christianity. But if a man have no historical faith; if he was born a heathen or a Jew, or has cast off all reverence for his national Christianity, from seeing so much hypocrisy and worldliness in it, and knowing nothing of the good;—then he casts the burden of proof the other way: he disbelieves, until somebody shows him valid reason for believing things marvellous and beyond his expe-

rience. Is now the reader blind to the signs of the times? It is *absolutely impossible* to recover the tens of thousands who have learned to scorn Christian faith, by arguments of erudition and criticism. Unless the appeal can be made directly to the Conscience and the Soul, faith in Christianity once lost by the vulgar is lost for ever: what could the very chiefest of Apostles do to bring it back? They never converted one soul by learned proofs addressed to the logical intellect; and why should we dream that they would attempt it now, or could succeed? If we continue to do as we are doing,—*if no action of a totally new kind is set up*,—the present course of affairs must go steadily forward, but with accelerated velocity, in proportion to the increase of mental sharpness or physical destitution: a real, black infidelity will spread among the millions,—an infidelity of the soul to God, of the heart to virtue,—until the large towns of England become what Paris is. And as for the cultivated and philosophic, what else will they become but simple Pantheists? acknowledging intellectually a plastic Spirit or as it were Life in the Universe, but just as ignorant of that inward life with God, which has been the great animating principle of Christianity and of the highest Judaism, as if they were avowed Atheists.

But it will be said: "What are we to do? we are not Apostles? and how can we speak as Apostles?" I reply: if you wish to be a follower of the Apostles, and can seize and keep *both* the form *and* the



life of their teaching,—well : do so. Imitate all the early preachers of Christianity. In teaching about God and Christ, lay aside the wisdom of the wise : forswear History and all its apparatus : hold communion with the Father and the Son in the Spirit : from this communion learn all that is essential to the Gospel, and still (if possible) retain every proposition which Paul believed and taught. Propose them to the faith of others, *to be tested by inward and spiritual evidence only* ; and you will at least be in the true apostolic track.—If however you meet (as I confess I meet) insuperable difficulties here, in the attempt to hold fast, on such a basis, the *form* of their Gospel ; then, solemnly do I say, Oh God most High, let us not lose the *Spirit* also ! At present, we are trampling down the Spirit, in an attempt to retain the Form : with how little success even as to that mean object, our countless divisions prove.

The Gordian knot in which we find ourselves entangled, and which (it seems to me) must be boldly cut, and can never be untied, is this :—*we cannot reason as the Apostles did, unless we could recover the Metaphysics and Logic of the apostolic age.* This is now to us a matter of erudition : with them it was a medium of all common thought to rich and poor alike, except to a few highly cultivated men. Modern research and experience have wrought a revolution in all our notions of Evidence. We cannot take Astronomical proof of a Physiological proposition, nor Chemical proof of a Moral one :

we have learned the divisions of the Sciences. But Plato did not hesitate to offer Grammatical proofs of the Soul's Immortality; and the ancients in general were prone to give Moral proofs of Physical truth, or perhaps Physical explanations of Moral facts. We now know that though in their higher developement the Sciences osculate, yet (to the human mind) their bases are quite independent, the specific facts of each being furnished by a specific sense or informant: and a result of this is, that the idea of Historical Religion involves to every free and clear mind as essential a contradiction as Historical Astronomy or Mathematical Religion. Every Science *has* a History; but cannot *be* History, nor can History be it. As to Historical Religion, we find in it two incongruous elements, iron and miry clay, that will not mix. The iron is the pure morals and spiritual doctrine, of which the conscience and Soul take cognizance; and this is at once the strong part and the precious part of Christianity; being concerned with Eternal Truth. The miry clay is the historical element, of which the Soul can take no cognizance at all; which is concerned with the accidents of Time; which is to be dealt with by critical erudition (according to *our* notions of Evidence) and therefore is essentially out of the reach of the great mass of mankind. How can we then include the latter element in Religion at all? This mixture of the Historical with the Spiritual effectually forbids formal Christianity to be a pure

spiritual system, and cripples all its spiritual energy.

That the metaphysics (or current philosophy) of early ages, and of the Apostles themselves, was here in irreeconcilable opposition to ours, is clear beyond dispute. If an Englishman of this century, however devout and morally wise, were to declare that he had learned *by communion with God* the truth or falsehood of some external event, said to have happened in a distant time or place, (as a Virgin's immaculate conception, or somebody's impeccability,) he would be thought a hopeless fanatic or monomaniac. It is a first principle with us that the spiritual faculties can discern spiritual things *only*, and cannot teach worldly and external truth, which essentially demands the aid of the specific bodily senses. Nor would it any the more satisfy us, if the person asserted that the knowledge was imparted to him in a supernatural trance or mesmeric rapture: for we should ask how he discriminated his revelation from a dream or dosing fancy; and until he explained this, and gave us the means of testing and verifying the accuracy of this new faculty of his, his statement would go for nothing. Now it is clear that in ancient times no call was made for this discrimination, nor for any verification at all. A person who professed to have a vision was believed outright, provided that the moral and spiritual doctrine connected with it seemed satisfactory: for spiritual men then judged by the Soul *all*

things that stood in any spiritual connection, even those which in our view manifestly cannot be made independent of Sense or of the common Understanding.

I will not vex either myself or my reader by saying one word *in detail* concerning the very serious difficulties of the (so-called) Christian Evidences. It suffices to say, that I have found them moulder away under my own feet, the more I examined them, although I was profoundly anxious to find them valid, and have never for one instant lost the devotional principles and practices, which, I fervently thank God, I learned from the epistles of Paul and from Christian Hymns. Let the reader give to this just what weight it deserves; but let him add to it a far broader fact,—the state of religious opinion among the learned divines of Protestant Germany; and then consider whether our modern notions of Evidence are not essentially at variance with formal Christianity.

And here, (if I meet with a reader of that stamp,) I may be told that the last hint contains lamentable truth, but that we ought therefore to throw away our modern Philosophy, as false and impious, and adopt afresh the Philosophy of the apostolic age. This will be said seriously and devoutly by thousands of women, and by men of feminine understandings; yet I do not hesitate to assert, that whoever holds this language, is (just in proportion to his influence) actively fighting against the souls of men—little as he knows it,—and helping to pro-

pagate heathen darkness. He virtually tells us, that *we shall not have God in our Souls, except by the sacrifice of our Understandings*. Hereby he does not any the more enter the kingdom of God himself, but he hinders others from entering it. As the old Jews "pleased not God, and were contrary to men," forbidding the Gentiles to be saved, unless they would accept the law of Moses, so have these moderns a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge.

First of all, it is *wicked* so to sacrifice our understandings: and secondly, though possible in an individual case, it is quite *impossible* on a large scale.—It is a wicked thought, that we can please God by a lie. It is a wicked thought, that He asks this of us; and that he has so constructed our nature, that its different parts are essentially in conflict. And the result of such a wilful sacrifice of the understanding, might be a wretched, incurable, drivelling superstition; nay, any amount of moral corruption, if the remonstrances of the understanding are thus put down by authority. It is not into modern English orthodoxy, nor into an enlightened Romanism, that such a sacrifice might plunge us; but into whatever is ugliest in the darkest Romanism: for the check to black superstition being once broken in pieces, we are left at the mercy of accident, as to how far we may go. Now the Apostles and their contemporaries *made no such sacrifice* of their understandings. They breathed the philosophy of their own century; and if we are

to imitate their spirit, we shall abide in ours, and not engage the two parts of our nature in a fatal civil war; which is certainly what they never did, nor approved. The "vain philosophy" which Paul deprecates, is that which the Soul spurns as unspiritual,—namely, the pretence of a sanctification from Fastings, Ceremonies and Bodily *Exercise* or Asceticism: Coloss. ii.

But secondly, such a method of solving our difficulties is *impossible*. Within certain limits, the Will no doubt has controul over intellectual opinion, namely, when the evidence on which an opinion rests does not meet us everywhere, but in certain places only. Then we can purposely shun that evidence, and fill our minds with what is of opposite tendency; in which way men bring themselves sincerely to believe many things, which it is for their apparent spiritual benefit to believe or for their worldly interest to profess. But this power of the Will is not omnipotent. Three centuries ago it was able to sustain a man in the disbelief of the Copernican, and in the belief of the Tychonian theory; it is now, on the contrary, quite unequal to such an effect on a mind which moves in educated or half-educated circles; because the certainty of truth in the Copernican or rather Newtonian system has permeated all cultivated thought: hence the Will cannot avoid the evidence or hinder its effect on the judgment. Precisely the same thing is true of those logical principles, which pervade, as axioms, all modern accurate investigation. In every step for-

ward which the Sciences make, in all their harmonious results, in all their practical applications, we have perpetual verification of the truth of the great principles by which their processes are animated: and the conviction of this has sunk deep into the hearts of all, who, even as artizans only, behold the achievements of practical science. It is thought a great thing for a man to stake his life on the truth of his religious faith. It is *not* a great thing, but a matter of every day, for common men to stake their lives on the truth of scientific propositions; which propositions would be quite uncertain, if any doubt rested on the soundness of our scientific foundations. He who knowingly sets Religion into contest with Science, is digging a pit for the souls of his fellow men. Except the more ignorant or rash, all probably will allow this: a sufficient proof indeed of it is found in the actual state of Theology. Why else would men load themselves with the unendurable burden called Christian Evidences? a mass of investigation, which, if it is to be calmly and thoroughly judged, requires some ten years' persevering study from a cultivated intellect in its prime. Why all this effort for Theological Colleges, and instruction in learned Divinity, except that it is felt to the very bottom of our minds, that external miracles can only be believed upon external proofs? And this is a conviction too profound, ever to be got rid of by any resoluteness of the Will to return to a more primitive metaphysics. Hence also it is, that in the seats of learning the literal

doctrine of the Reformers cannot flourish any more than of the Apostles : for when Religion has become perversely logical, it gets beaten on the ground of logic.

Religion can never resume her pristine vigour, until she becomes purely Spiritual, and, as in apostolic days, appeals only to the Soul : and the real problem for all who wish to save cultivated Europe from Pantheism, Selfishness, and Sensuality, (such as flooded and ruined ancient Greece,) is,—to extract and preserve the heavenly spirit of Christianity, while neglecting its earthly husk. Our Deists of past centuries tried to make religion a matter of the pure intellect, and thereby halted at the very frontier of its inward life : they cut themselves off even from all acquaintance with the experience of spiritual men, and their religion necessarily vacillated between that of Plato and Aristotle. Practical Christianity has been as nothing to them, because they took those divines at their word, who said that it all depended on historical faith ;—which in fact is as needless, as it is confessedly insufficient. Let this truth be avowed, and a preacher, animated by the spirit of Christ and Paul, will have plenty to say, alike to the vulgar and to the philosophers, appreciable by the Soul. Then he will be able to keep clear of Historical and other extraneous inquiries. The guide through entanglements is this single principle : to render to the Understanding the things that belong to the Understanding, and to the Soul the things of the Soul. Then he may speak



with confidence, of what he knows and feels; and call on his hearers, of themselves to try and prove his words. Then, the conversion of men to the love of God may take place by hundreds and thousands, as in some former instances. Then at length some hope may dawn that Mohammedans and Hindoos may be joined in one fold with us, under one Divine Shepherd, who will have changed his name only. Then finally, the long schism of Jew and Gentile may be healed, and the hearts of the *fathers* may be turned to the *children*, ere God comes to smite us both with a curse.

I well know that (if this book be read) people will exclaim, that I am advising them to throw away Christianity *itself*, when I make light of its historical and miraculous side: and none will be more clamorous to this effect, than those who care little about that spiritual life which Paul lived, and which is here set forth as essential Christianity. Now-a-days men are generally thought fanatical, whose souls are in sympathy with Paul's: and I feel certain that this book will meet with at least as much dislike (not to use a harsher word) because it lays down certain Christian experiences as matter of fact, as because it treats as unimportant those things which are indifferent to the life of the Soul. Answer to God, ye who think yourselves on the side of Paul and John; who say of yourselves, "The Temple of the Lord, the Temple of the Lord, are *we*;"—do you believe in Sanctification of the Spirit by Peace with God? in the New Birth of the

Soul by believing in God? in the Free Grace of Him, who loved us before we loved Him? in Justification of the sinner, in the midst of his sins, by simple Faith in God? in the permanent Union of the believing Soul with God? what know you of the love of God shed abroad in the heart by the Spirit, and of the Hope, that makes not ashamed, thence arising? or of man's insight into the heart of God, when he has received somewhat of that Spirit which searcheth even the deep things of God? of a Faith that overcomes the World? of a Spirit that guides by a higher rule than Law? Such sentiments and experiences (not propositions) are the true heart of Christianity: and if thou, Oh reader, hold them not,—thou mayst haply have the shell of Christian truth, but thou hast not the kernel. If thou know and believe them, thou wilt not say, "They are all worth nothing, without a belief in Historical and Metaphysical paradoxes."

Alas! what extension of Christianity can be expected among our neglected millions, when men in high ecclesiastical places eagerly promote sacerdotal inanities! when zeal is called out for Episcopal Power, for Baptismal Regeneration, for Mechanical Apostolic Succession; nay, for Episcopal Revenues and lordly pomp; when the higher clergy are exposed to the taunt of loving the splendours and greatness of this world, and therefore of not having the love of God in them; when not only Mechanical Inspiration is ascribed to the Bible, but a power of

L

Mechanical Consecration to the hands of Bishops and Priests ; nor only immaculate truth to "all and everything" in the book of Common Prayer, but extreme importance to everything in the Rubric ! The heart sinks at the infatuation of such extravagances, while sin and crime and hardness of heart are abroad among us. Meanwhile, it is well if the Soul's present union with God in peace and joy and sanctification is only secretly despised, and not denounced as hypocritical or fanatical rant, by those who display zeal for the Church and for the doctrine of the Trinity. Yet of what use would Baptism or Bishops or the Church or the Trinity or the promise of Heaven be to us, if the soul had here no union or sympathy with God ? If earthly things have been tendered to us, and we receive them not, why should God show us things beyond the grave ? and if we have not been faithful in that which is our own, who shall commit to us that which is another's ? To rise to the full dimensions of the Jew, is surely pre-requisite for those who aspire to the stature of Christ ; and even the Jew thirsted for God, found peace with Him, loved Him, rejoiced in Him, clung to Him. Yet, after the first blaze of apostolic Christianity, the heavenly flame instantly paled, the Churches declined, form and rule grew up, Bishops became proud, superstition increased, controversy raged, persecution began, this World became the prize for which the Churches fought, ecclesiastical dominion took deep root, darkness

overspread the earth, polytheism invaded what should have been God's kingdom, and cruelty, sensuality, ambition and avarice hid beneath priests' robes. Devout individuals there always were, whose spiritual life was independent of the prevailing system: but no public and visible ameliorations took place, except very partially, where a little Freedom was obtained; until the great Insurrection against Authority, to which the name of Luther has been attached. The Reformation brought about much good, till the forces of Freedom which animated it were again chained down; and then commenced a new decay, and a sapping of spiritual faith, alike in Germany and in England. Is it not historically manifest, that *Authority* has been the bane of the Churches? Authority; which means, bowing down to man, and therefore (unless we could serve two Masters) a neglecting of God. To set up men as models, insures degeneracy in everything. Christians also were certain to degenerate, the moment they began to worship apostles and books and church-rules and precedent and tradition, and thus to sip at other men's buckets, instead of drawing living water from the true fountain, God himself. Better would it have been to retain peaceably in the church shoals of Judaists, Docetists, Gnostics, Cerinthians, Valentinians, and every heterodox name which Theology hates, than to acquiesce in the belief that all God's inspiration had been drunk up by the

apostles, and drive out into corners and overwhelm with contumely (as we also now are apt to do) the only men who might have secured that Freedom, without which there can be no Justice and no Love in a community. So Christ's church, where all were to be brethren and where no one was to bear rule, was turned into a kingdom of this world, where the few ruled over the many; while the many liked to have it so, and applauded the cruel and wicked punishment of those who would not be subject. So too the passions of princes and the struggles of party have dictated rigid forms of orthodoxy, which secure no one spiritual quality of soul, and which Satan would subscribe, if occasion required. So now they strain out of God's ministry all who have scrupulous consciences, and swallow down the world unstrained; and while men frown or tremble at Free Inquiry and bar their windows against the light of Criticism, they do not blush to enunciate, that whoso receives not the words to which they give assent, *hath not received the love of the Truth, that he might be saved!* Might not one call on the Powers of Darkness to rejoice, that Darkness calls itself Light, and religious England believes it?

But alas, it is not the Church of the State only, that is paralyzed. None of the Churches, except in some small measure the fanatical ones, address themselves directly to the Soul. Nearly all the teachers of that Gospel, which once scorned the

learning of this world, confound worldly sciences,—the domain of erudition,—with spiritual knowledge and faith. They appeal to the Intellect, not to the Soul, in order to establish a spiritual religion; and try to force propositions into the mind, instead of bidding the heart freely to expand in the light and glory and love of God.

Surely God has a noble army of faithful men, who would follow the right, if they did but see it: but many an old idol has to be broken, many a mental struggle to be gone through. Oh brethren, (if there be any whom I may dare so to address,) learn that inspired words were not meant as premisses for syllogisms, nor as ready-made weapons against heretics, nor as barriers against free thought and feeling; but as torches that kindle new souls, so that the *child* in the Spirit is as truly inspired as the *parent*: for the heart of man is still young; the Spirit of God has not died out. The Bible is a blessed book, rightly used: yet the Bible may be causing more spiritual evil than any other book, if by it you smother the Holy Spirit within yourselves, and condemn those who love God. A great revolution of mind is wanted. *The kingdom of God* is not meat and drink, nor sermons and sabbaths, nor history and exegesis, nor a belief in the infallibility of any book, nor in the supernatural memory of any man; but it is, as Paul says, *righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit*. And he who in these last is minded as

Christ, is accepted with God, and shall at length be approved by men. For to the life of God neither belief in miracles availeth anything, nor unbelief; but a New Creation; and Faith that worketh by Love: and as many as walk after THIS RULE, peace shall be upon them and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

THE END.







May, 1849.

\* \* Mr. Chapman will supply this, as well as his Catalogue of American works, gratis, or post free, on application.

## LIST OF NEW AND RECENT WORKS

PUBLISHED BY

JOHN CHAPMAN,

142, STRAND, LONDON.

### **The Nemesis of Faith.**

By J. A. FROUDE, M.A., Fellow of Exeter College, Oxford. Post 8vo, cloth, 6s.

"This remarkable book is an emanation of that deep thought on the condition of man and the conventions of society, which is going on to a much greater extent, we imagine, than Parliamentary or public-meeting speakers wot of, though it takes very various and even opposite directions, according to the circumstances, education, and religious temperament of the thinker....

.....'The Nemesis of Faith' possesses the first requisites of a book. It has power, matter, and mastery of subject, with that largeness which must arise from the writer's mind, and that individual character—those truths of detail—which spring from experience or observation. The pictures of an English home in childhood, youth, and early manhood, as well as the thoughts and feelings of the student at Oxford, are painted with feeling pervaded by a current of thought; the remarks on the humbug of the three learned professions, more especially on the worldliness of the church, are not mere declamation, but the outpouring of an earnest conviction; the picture of Anglican Protestantism, dead to faith, to love, and to almost everything but wealth-worship, with the statement of the objects that Newman first proposed to himself, form the best defence of Tractarianism that has appeared, though defence does not seem to be the object of the author. The circumstances connected with the growth of the passion between Helen and Markham are not perhaps very probable, but they are skilfully contrived for their purpose; and the display

of the passion itself—the recklessness to everything in the woman, and the consideration of future consequences in the man—are portrayed with great skill. As the main literary object is to display the struggles of a mind with the growth and grounds of opinion, incident are subordinate to the intellectual results that spring from them; but there is no paucity of incident if the work be judged by its own standard. The mind of the writer has not the poetical or mystic tenderness of Newman or Wilberforce, though not devoid of depth and feeling, and possessing considerable power. Traces of a training for the preacher are found in a peculiar kind of hortative exclamation; and the general character of the composition is rhetorical—but it is the rhetoric of earnestness, not of emptiness."—*Spectator*.

"The most striking quality in Mr. Froude's writing is his descriptive eloquence. His characters are all living before us, and have no sameness. His quickness of eye is manifest equally in his insight into human minds, and in his perceptions of natural beauty..... His pages are full of beauty and interest. The fourth letter on old Paganism is an exquisite piece of poetry. The style of the letters is every where charming. The confessions of a Sceptic are often brilliant, and always touching. The closing narrative is fluent, graphic, and only too highly wrought in painful beauty."—*Prospective Review*, May 1849.  
... "The book becomes in its soul-burning truthfulness, a quite invaluable re-

cord of the fiery struggles and temptations through which the youth of this nineteenth century has to force its way in religious matters. . . . Especially is it a great warning and protest against three great falsehoods. Against self-deluded word orthodoxy and bibliolatry, setting up the Bible for a mere dead idol instead of a living witness to Christ. Against frothy philosophic infidelity, merely changing the chaff of old systems for the chaff of new, addressing men's intellects and ignoring their spirits. Against Tractarianism,

trying to make men all belief, as Straburgers make geese all liver, by darkness and cramming; manufacturing state folly as the infidel state wisdom, deliberately giving the lie to God, who has made man in his own image, body, soul, and spirit, by making the two first decrepit for the sake of pampering the last. . . . Against these three falsehoods, we say, does the book before us protest; after its own mournful fashion, most strongly when most unconsciously."—*Fraser's Mag.*, May, 1849.

### The Beauties of Channing.

With an Essay prefixed. By WILLIAM MOUNTFORD. 12mo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

"This is really a book of beauties. It is no collection of shreds and patches, but a faithful representative of a mind which deserves to have its image reproduced in a thousand forms. It is such a selection from Channing as Channing himself might have made. It is as though we had the choicest passages of those divine discourses read

to us by a kindred spirit. . . . Those who have read *Martyria* will feel that no man can be better qualified than its author, to bring together those passages which are at once characteristic, and most rich in matter tending to the moral and religious elevation of human beings."—*Inquirer*.

### The Soul: her Sorrows and her Aspirations.

An Essay towards the Natural History of the Soul, as the basis of Theology. By FRANCIS WILLIAM NEWMAN, formerly Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. Post 8vo, cloth.

#### CONTENTS.

- |   |                                  |
|---|----------------------------------|
| I. Contents of the Infinite without us. | IV. Progress of the Spirit.      |
| II. Sense of Sin.                       | V. Hopes concerning Future Life. |
| III. Sense of personal Relation to God. | VI. Prospects of Christianity.   |

### Letters to a Female Friend.

By WILLIAM VON HUMBOLT. Translated from the German. Post 8vo, cloth. [In the Press.]

### Popular Christianity: its Transition State and probable Development.

Post 8vo, cloth.

[In the Press.]

### Beverberations.

Fcp. 8vo, in paper cover, 1s.

[Now Ready.]

### DR. CHANNING'S MEMOIR.

#### Memoir of William Ellery Channing, D.D.

With Extracts from his Correspondence and Manuscripts. Edited by his Nephew, WILLIAM HENRY CHANNING; and embellished by the very superior Portraits of Dr. Channing, engraved on steel, from paintings by the eminent artists Allston and Gambardella. 3 vols. post 8vo., cloth, £1 8s.

"This is a valuable contribution to literature. The peculiar eminence reached by Dr. Channing during his life makes a history of himself and

of his mind indispensable to the future student of opinion."—*Athenæum*.

"It is a work of high merit, and of deep interest."—*Examiner*.

"He had none of the narrow intolerance that distinguishes the more rigid sectarians."—*Spectator*.

"It is pleasing to add, that objections to the theological tenets of Dr. Channing, do not prevent our entertaining a high admiration of his general writings; but this admiration rises to a far higher feeling as we study his biography; for we see that, 'singularly lofty as is the spirit which his writings breathe, he was true to them in heart and life:' and we find the secret of his eloquence in the power which elevated ideas and enlarged conceptions of all that is just, pure, true, grand, beautiful, loving, and holy, had in the transformation of his being."—*Chambers' Journal*.

"The felicitous combination of a chaste and eloquent style with clear and powerful reasoning, placed his writings before his age generally, and far before his age in the United States."—*Tait's Magazine*.

"He was a remarkable man, and he rendered remarkable service. His mental history is deeply interesting."—*Eclectic Review*.

"We find it difficult to tear ourselves from these deeply interesting volumes, which we are disposed to rank among the best biographies of the age."—*Christian Reformer*.

"It is long since a piece of biography has issued from the press more fraught

with instruction than are the volumes before us. Every page teems with thought, is expressive of elevated sympathies, and brings us in fellowship with mind in some of its highest tones of culture and experience."—*British Quarterly Review*.

"This Memoir will be read in all denominations; and wherever it is read, must exert a most powerful and elevating influence."—*Inquirer*.

"There are many among us who owe more than they can tell to Dr. Channing, who received from him impressions never to be erased."—*Christian Examiner*.

"He was emphatically a Christian minister, in all the high meaning of that term. His life was eminently useful and beautiful. He died in good season, leaving a memory that will long be blessed."—*Massachusetts Quarterly Review*.

"Dr. Channing was no ordinary man, and it is well that a memoir of him should be given to the public."—*Standard of Freedom*.

"We believe that the influence of Channing has far exceeded the measure of power usually attained by moral writers; and we are sure that its quality has been as pure as its extent has been vast. The popularity of his writings is one of many signs—needed indeed to cheer us amid more conspicuous encouragements—that a sound and noble heart yet lives, and may be reached, in this working, weary England."—*Prospective Review*.

## The Artist's Married Life : being that of Albert Dürer.

For devout Disciples of the Arts, Prudent Maidens, as well as for the Profit and Instruction of all Christendom, given to the light. Translated from the German of Leopold Schefer, by Mrs. J. R. STODART. 1 vol. fcp. 8vo, ornamental binding, 6s.

"It is the worthy aim of the novelist to show that even the trials of genius are part of its education—that its very wounds are furrows for its harvest..... No one, indeed, would have a right to expect from the author of the 'Laienbrevier' (see *Ath.* No. 437) such a stern and forcible picture of old times and trials as a Meinhold can give—still less the wire-drawn sentimentalities of a Hahn-Hahn; but pure thoughts—high morals—tender feelings—might be looked for..... The merits of this story consist in its fine purpose, and its thoughtful, and for the most part just, exposition of man's inner life. To those who, chiefly appreciating such qualities, can dispense with the stimulants of incident and passion, the book before us will not be unacceptable."—*Athenæum*.

"The work reminds us of the happiest efforts of Tieck..... The design is to show how, in spite of every obstacle, genius will manifest itself to the world, and give shape and substance to its beautiful dreams and fancies..... It is a very pure and delightful composition, is tastefully produced in an antique style, and retains in the translation all the peculiarities (without which the book would lose half its merit) of German thought and idiom."—*Britannia*.

"Simply then we assure our readers that we have been much pleased with this work. The narrative portion is well conceived, and completely illustrates the author's moral; while it is interspersed with many passages which are full of beauty and pathos."—*Inquirer*.

**Italy: past and present.**

OR, GENERAL VIEWS OF ITS HISTORY, RELIGION, POLITICS, LITERATURE, and ART. By L. MARIOTTI. 2 vols. post 8vo. Cloth, £1 1s.

\* \* The first of these volumes is a reprint, revised and enlarged, of a work published under the same title in 1841, and now out of print. The second volume is altogether new, and refers solely to the *present* condition of the country, and will be sold separately if required, price 10s. 6d.

"This is a useful book, informed with lively feeling and sound judgment. It contains an exhibition of Italian views of matters, social and political, by an Italian who has learned to speak through English thoughts as well as English words. Particularly valuable are the sketches of recent Italian history; for the prominent characters are delineated in a cordial and sympathetic spirit, yet free from enthusiastic ideas, and with unsparing discrimination.... The criticisms on "The Past" will richly repay perusal; it is, however, on "The Present" of Italy that the main interest of the book resides. This volume does not merely possess an interest similar to that of contemporary works; it supplies a desideratum, and is well adapted to aid the English

reader in forming a just estimate of the great events now in progress in Italy. Not the least wonderful part of the book is the entire mastery the author has acquired of our language."—*Examiner*, April.

"This important work treats the literature and politics of Italy in a masterly manner, and will repay tenfold the labour of perusal."—*Douglas Jerrold's Weekly Paper*.

"This is an exceedingly seasonable, intelligent, and interesting work."—*Daily News*.

"Our author has an earnest, nay enthusiastic, love and admiration of his native country; with the ability and eloquence to render his subject very interesting and attractive."—*Morning Advertiser*.

The following notices refer to the first volume of the work :—

"The work is admirable, useful, instructive. I am delighted to find an Italian coming forward with so much noble enthusiasm, to vindicate his country and obtain for it its proper interest in the eyes of Europe. The English is wonderful..... I never saw any approach to such a style in a foreigner before—as full of beauty in diction as in thought."—*Sir E. Bulwer Lytton, Bart.*

"I recognise the rare characteristics of genius—a large conception of the topic, a picturesque diction founded on profound thought, and that passionate sensibility which becomes the subject—a subject beautiful as its climate, and inexhaustible as its soil."—*B. Disraeli, Esq., M.P.*

"A very rapid and summary resume of the fortunes of Italy from the fall of the Roman Empire to the present moment.—A work of industry and labour, written with a good purpose.—A bird's-eye view of the subject that will revive the recollections of the scholar, and seduce the tyro into a longer course of reading."—*Athenæum*.

"This work contains more information on the subject, and more references to the present position of Italy, than we have seen in any recent production."—*Foreign Quarterly Review*.

"In reference to style, the work

before us is altogether extraordinary, as that of a foreigner, and in the higher quality of thought we may commend the author for his acute, and often original, criticism, and his quick perception of the grand and beautiful in his native literature."—*Prescott (in the North American Review)*.

"The work before us consists of a continuous parallel of the political and literary history of Italy from the earliest period of the middle ages to the present time. The author not only penetrates the inner relations of those dual appearances of national life, but possesses the power of displaying them to the reader with great clearness and effect. We remember no other work in which the civil conditions and literary achievements of a people have been blended in such a series of living pictures, representing successive periods of history."—*Algemeine Zeitung*.

"An earnest and eloquent work."—*Examiner*.

"A work ranking distinctly in the class of belles lettres, and well deserving of a library place in England."—*Literary Gazette*.

"A work warmly admired by excellent judges."—*Tait's Magazine*.

"An admirable work written with great power and beauty."—*Prof. Longfellow. (Poets and Poetry of Europe.)*

## The Principles of Nature, her Divine Revelations, and a Voice

TO MANKIND. By and through ANDREW JACKSON DAVIS, the "Poughkeepsie Seer," and "Clairvoyant." 2 vols. large 8vo. cloth, 18s.

\* \* The Work consists of 800 pages, including a history of its production, with a Biographical Sketch, and Portrait (engraved on Steel) of the Author.

"Taken as a whole, the work is a profound and elaborate discussion of the *Philosophy of the Universe*, and for grandeur of conception, soundness of principle, clearness of illustration, order of arrangement and encyclopaedical range of subjects, I know of no work of any single mind that will bear away from it the palm. To every theme the inditing mind approaches with a certain latent consciousness of mastery of all its principles, details, and technicalities; and yet without the least ostentatious display of superior mental powers."—*Dr. Bush, Professor of Hebrew in New York.*

"In whatever view the work is regarded, it is a very remarkable production, and will assuredly attract extensive attention here, as it already has in America."—*Morning Advertiser.*

"The book has excited so much interest in America, that though large, consisting of 800 pages, 900 copies were sold in one week."—*Family Herald.*

"Viewed as one will, the book is one of the most remarkable literary curiosities ever heard of."—*Massachusetts Quarterly Review.*

"The main idea is skilfully sustained and developed, and there is a great deal in the book that we admire, and have long admired in other connexions."—*American Christian Examiner.*

"A very wonderful book, exhibiting everywhere a gigantic grasp of thought."—*Critic.*

"Let our readers distinctly understand that we do not on any supposition regard this book as common place, or easily explained. Be it fraud, delusion, or mixture,—be it mesmerism, or newly invented communication from the spiritual world, or downright revelation, be it any one of these, or anything else, it is very curious. As soon as the right name is found for it, we will be the first to call, of that name, extraordinary,—very extraordinary."—*Athenæum.*

## Peter Jones, or Onward Bound.

An Autobiography. Post 8vo, cloth, 3s.

"The idea of the biography is to depict a mind rising from a condition of ignorance, and, by means of mechanics' institutions, and the reading of books in the English tongue, realising for itself the relations between philosophy, science, and religion, and the

bearing of all on theological dogmata and the literature of the Hebrews. The writer is manifestly competent to his task, and has accomplished it with uncommon ability and considerable taste."—*Douglas Jerrold's Newspaper.*

## Poems. By Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Post 8vo. 6s. cloth gilt.

"There are in these stanzas many a fine image and sometimes a cluster of such—scattered symbols of deep significance—and the presence of sincere and earnest thinking everywhere..... A wild low music accompanies these artless strains; an indistinct, uncertain melody—such a tune as an untaught musical nature might choose to itself in solitary places..... There are sometimes stanzas which are suggestive, not only in a political relation, but in one far higher—as touching those social reforms which now everywhere command the attention of society. Some portions of a series of poems entitled 'Wood Notes,' are in their peculiar way yet finer; and the entire succession has been enthusiastically received on the other side of the Atlantic."—*Athenæum.*

"There are in this volume unmistakable evidences of genius; the soul of the poet flashes out continually; and the hand of the poet is seen often."—*Critic.*

"He occasionally reminds us of the reflective depth of Wordsworth; and sometimes evinces a delicate fancy and richness of epithet worthy of Tennyson."—*Manchester Examiner.*

"His lines are full of meaning."—*Inquirer.*

"To read his finer pieces is to our poetic feeling like receiving a succession of electric shocks;... even his unshaped fragments are not bits of glass but of diamond, and have always the true poetic lustre. We know of no compositions that surpass his in their characteristic excellence."—*Christian Examiner.*

**Endeavours after the Christian Life. (First Series.)**

By JAMES MARTINEAU. Second Edition: 12mo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

**Endeavours after the Christian Life. (Second Series.)**

By JAMES MARTINEAU. 12mo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

"Heartily do we welcome a second volume of 'Endeavours after the Christian Life,' because when all that suits not our taste is omitted, we have still left more to instruct, interest, improve, and elevate, than in almost any other volume with which we are acquainted..... Whatever may be its defects, we regard it as one of the most precious gifts to the religious world in modern times."—*Inquirer*.

"Mr. Martineau is known, much beyond the limits of his own denomination, as a man of great gifts and accomplishments, and his publications have been all marked by subtle and vigorous thought, much beauty of imagination, and certain charms of composition, which are sure to find admirers..... There is a delicacy and ethereality of ethical sentiment in these discourses which must commend them, and we may safely say that many

of the orthodox in all departments might receive from them intellectual stimulus, moral polish, and in some moods religious edification,"—*Nonconformist*.

"One of the most interesting, attractive, and most valuable series of essays which the literature of Christianity has received from priest or layman for many a year.

"Volumes that have in them both intellect and true eloquence, and which satisfy the understanding while they please the taste and improve the heart.

"When we say that these *Discourses* are eminently *practical*, we mean that they are adapted, not only for man in the abstract—to teach the duties of Christianity everywhere—but also with reference to the circumstances of society—of the age and country in which our lot is cast."—*Critic*.

**Political Economy, and the Philosophy of Government.**

A Series of Essays selected from the works of M. DE SISMONDI. With an Historical Notice of his Life and Writings by M. MIGNET. Translated from the French, and illustrated by Extracts from an unpublished Memoir, and from M. de Sismondi's private Journals and Letters, to which is added a List of his Works, and a preliminary Essay, by the Translator. 8vo. cloth, 12s.

"In this country the views of Sismondi, long derided, and long kept down, have lately achieved a signal triumph, and are still advancing for the amelioration of social ills..... The essays embody Sismondi's settled views on Political Economy, and on the true policy which should animate a Government..... After having studied more deeply than most men, the science of Government and the speculations of Political Philosophy, he settled down into the conviction that the principles of Christianity were as applicable to the life of nations as to that of individuals, and that the happiness of the people would be best promoted by observing them..... Besides the essays the volume contains many curious illustrations of the Life of Sismondi..... In an ingenious preliminary essay by the translator, the views of Sismondi are applied to our social condition at the present time. The volume is altogether admirably produced, and, we think, is entitled to the earnest consideration of all persons who take an interest in social politics."—*Britannia*.

"Few recent writers on Political

Economy have claims on our attention equal to those of Sismondi. In England he is best known as an historian, but he is no less entitled to high reputation as a sound and thoughtful expounder of the social sciences..... We cordially recommend this volume, as forming a most pleasant introduction to the study of the sciences of which it treats. It is both valuable in itself and peculiarly well timed."—*Atlas*.

"The work is admirably translated. It has all the vigour of original composition. The preliminary notice by the translator is replete with enlightened ideas. We heartily commend the volume to all who feel an interest in the great social and political problems which must soon be solved and adjusted, lest England is reduced to the state of Ireland."—*Douglas Jerrold's News*.

"We should like that these essays should have a wide circulation, and that the tone of pure benevolence which pervades them should thrill the hearts of cold-blooded economists with tenderer feelings of commiseration than usually mingle with their frigid calculations. There can be no question



as to the evils he so powerfully exposes being directly caused by the reckless application of the principles he would entirely discard.

"They will amply repay a careful reading, as each is a masterly discussion of the most prominent questions relating to our social condition."—*Nonecon.*

## History of the Hebrew Monarchy, from the Administration of

Samuel to the Babylonish Captivity. 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.

"It is truly refreshing to find Jewish history treated, as in the volume before us, according to the rules of sound criticism, and good sense. . . . The publication of such a work will form an epoch in biblical literature in this country."—*Inquirer.*

"The Author has brought a very acute mind, familiar with knowledge that is beyond the range of ordinary scholarship, to the task of combining and interpreting the antique and fragmentary records which contain the

"A writer of first-rate merit in history and politics, and one whose sympathy with the poor and discernment of the true good of men and of nations must give weight to all his moral convictions, concerning the right and wrong of our results."—*Prospective Review.*

only materials for his work."—*Prospective Review.*

"This book must be regarded, we think, as the most valuable contribution ever made in the English Language to our means of understanding that portion of Hebrew History to which it relates. . . . The Author has not the common superstitious reverence for the Bible, but he shows everywhere a large, humane, and Christian spirit."—*Massachusetts Quarterly Review.*

## Honour; or, the Story of the brave Caspar and the fair Annerl.

By CLEMENS BRENTANO. With an Introduction and a Biographical Notice of the Author, by T. W. APPELL, Translated from the German. Fcp. 8vo. gilt edges, 2s. 6d.

## Shakspeare's Dramatic Art, and his relation to Calderon and

Goethe. Translated from the German of Dr. HERMANN ULRICH. 8vo. 12s. cloth.

### Outline of Contents.

- I. Sketch of the History of the English Drama before Shakspeare.  
—R. Greene and Marlowe.
- II. Shakspeare's Life and Times.
- III. Shakspeare's Dramatic Style, and Poetic View of the World and Things.

- IV. Criticism of Shakspeare's Plays.
- V. Dramas ascribed to Shakspeare of doubtful Authority.
- VI. Calderon and Goethe in their relation to Shakspeare.

"We strongly recommend the book to the notice of every lover of Shakspeare, for we may truly say that it is well calculated to fill up a void in our own as well as in German literature."—*Westminster Review.*

"The author has the 'Philosophic depth,' which we vainly look for in Schlegel's criticism of the great poet."—*The Dial.*

"We welcome it as an addition to our books on the national dramatist—exhaustive, comprehensive, and philosophical after a scholastic fashion, and throwing new lights upon many things in Shakspeare."—*Spectator.*

"The work of Ulrich in the original, has held, ever since its publication, an honoured place upon our shelves. We consider it as being, when taken all in all, one of the most valuable contributions ever made to the criticism of Shakspeare. The theoretical system upon which it rests, if not altogether accurate or completely exhaustive, is,

at all events, wide and searching; its manner of expression is almost everywhere clear and practical, and its critical expositions are given with equal delicacy of feeling and liveliness of fancy. . . . Here there are treated, successively, Shakspeare's language, his mode of representing characters, and his dramatic invention. . . . Our author has not only spoken with excellent good sense, but has placed one or two important points of Shakspeare's poetical character in a clearer light than that in which we are accustomed to regard them. Shakspeare is shown to be the historically-dramatic poet of enlightened Christianity; and the highest value of his works consists in their adequately representing, in the light of imagination, the Christian prospect of man's mysterious destiny."—*Tait's Magazine.*

"A good translation of Dr. Ulrich's work on Shakspeare cannot fail of being welcome to the English thinker. It is,



in fact, a vindication of our great poet from a charge which has lately been brought against him by critics on both sides of the Atlantic. Dr. Ulrici boldly claims for him the rank of an eminently Christian author. . . . The present work is the least German of all German books, and contains remarkable novelty in its views of the subject and the arrangement of its topics. The plan adopted by Dr. Ulrici of contemplating each play in the light of a central idea is especially deserving of all praise. . . . We recommend the entire criticism to the perusal of the judicious reader."—*Athenaeum*.

"Excellencies of a high order pervade this performance, which, in our judgment, entitle it to the grateful reception of all who are desirous of becoming better acquainted with the mind of Shakspeare. . . . The sketch of the modern dramatic art with which the book opens, as well as of the life of Shakspeare, is well drawn; indeed, the historical sketches throughout are admirably executed. . . . The author's

views are ingenious, and the criticisms on the several dramas are admirable, and will fully repay the reader's study."—*Nonconformist*.

"We welcome this work as a valuable accession to Shaksperian literature. It is the principal object of Dr. Ulrici's criticisms of the several plays, to trace and bring to light the fundamental and vivifying idea of each. In this difficult task we think he has been eminently successful. . . . We cannot dismiss this very valuable work, which breathes a tone of pure and exalted morality, derived from a mind truly religious, and whose holy and chastening influence expresses itself throughout, without remarking how much we admire the excellent manner in which it is translated."—*Inquirer*.

"Ulrici's admirable 'Shakspeare's Dramatic Art' has been lately translated with considerable skill. We recommend the work as an addition to our higher critical literature, and we should like to recur to it more fully."—*Christian Remembrancer*.

## The Life of Jesus, Critically Examined.

By DR. DAVID FRIEDRICH STRAUSS. 3 vols. 8vo. £1 16s. cloth.

"The extraordinary merit of this book. . . . Strauss's dialectic dexterity, his forensic coolness, the even polish of his style, present him to us as the accomplished pleader, too completely master of his work to feel the temptation to unfair advantage or unseemly temper. . . . We can testify that the translator has achieved a very tough work with remarkable spirit and fidelity. The author, though indeed a good writer, could hardly have spoken better had his country and language been English. The work has evidently fallen into the hands of one who has not only effective command of both languages, but a familiarity with the subject-matter of theological criticism, and an initiation into its technical phraseology."—*Westminster and Foreign Quarterly Review*, 1847.

"Whoever reads these volumes without any reference to the German, must be pleased with the easy, perspicuous, idiomatic, and harmonious force of the English style. But he will be still more satisfied when, on turning to the original, he finds that the rendering is word for word, thought for thought, and sentence for sentence. In preparing so beautiful a rendering as the present, the difficulties can have been neither few nor small in the way of preserving, in various parts of the work, the exactness of the translation, combined with that uniform harmony and clearness of style, which impart

to the volumes before us the air and spirit of an original. A modest and kindly care for his reader's convenience has induced the translator often to supply the rendering into English of a Greek quotation, where there was no corresponding rendering into German in the original. Indeed, Strauss may well say, as he does in the notice, which he writes for this English edition, that as far as he has examined it, the translation is, "et accurata et perspicua."—*Prospective Review*.

"In regard to learning, acuteness, and sagacious conjectures, the work resembles Niebuhr's 'History of Rome.' The general manner of treating the subject and arranging the chapters, sections, and parts of the argument, indicates consummate dialectical skill; while the style is clear, the expression direct, and the author's openness in referring to his sources of information, and stating his conclusions in all their simplicity, is candid and exemplary. . . . It not only surpasses all its predecessors of its kind in learning, acuteness, and thorough investigation, but it is marked by a serious and earnest spirit."—*Christian Examiner*.

"I found in M. Strauss a young man full of candour, gentleness, and modesty—one possessed of a soul that was almost mysterious, and, as it were, saddened by the reputation he had gained. He scarcely seems to be the author of the work under consideration."—*Quinet, Revue des Mondes*.

**The Dramas of Iphigenia in Tauris, and Torquato Tasso, of**

GOETHE; and the MAID OF ORLEANS, of SCHILLER. Translated, (omitting some passages,) with Introductory Remarks, by ANNA SWANWICK. 8vo, cloth; 6s.

"It is seldom that we meet with a translator so competent as the lady who has here rendered these selections from the two great poets of Germany into elegant and vigorous English verse. The 'Iphigenia' of Goethe has been already well done by Mr. William Taylor, of Norwich; but his version is not, by many degrees, so readable as the one before us."—*Athenaeum*.

"We have to congratulate the translator on perfect success in a very difficult task."—*Dublin University Magazine*.

"The translator has gone to her beautiful task in the right spirit, adhering with fidelity to the words of the original, and evidently penetrating the mind of the poet. The translations

are very beautiful; and while they will serve to make the mere English reader acquainted with two of the most perfect works ever written, the Iphigenia and the Tasso, they will form useful assistants to those who are commencing the study of the German language."—*Foreign Quarterly Review*.

"This English version presents these poems to us in a garb not unworthy of the conceptions of their authors."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"The verse is smooth and harmonious, and no one acquainted with the original can fail to be struck with its great fidelity and accuracy."—*Christian Teacher*.

**Channing's Works, Complete.**

Edited by JOSEPH BARKER. In 6 vols. 12mo. 6s. sewed, 8s. cloth.

**A Retrospect of the Religious Life of England;**

Or, the Church, Puritanism, and Free Inquiry. By JOHN JAMES TAYLER, B.A. Post 8vo. 10s 6d. cloth.

"The work is written in a chastely beautiful style, manifests extensive reading and careful research; is full of thought, and decidedly original in its character. It is marked also by the modesty which usually characterises true merit."—*Inquirer*.

"Mr. Tayler is actuated by no sectarian bias, and we heartily thank him for this addition to our religious literature."—*Westminster Review*.

"It is not often our good fortune to meet with a book so well conceived, so well written, and so instructive as this. The various phases of the national mind, described with the clearness and force of Mr. Tayler, furnish an inexhaustible material for reflection. Mr. Tayler regards all parties in turn from an equitable point of view, is tolerant towards intolerance, and admires zeal and excuses

fanaticism, wherever he sees honesty. Nay, he openly asserts that the religion of mere reason is not the religion to produce a practical effect on a people; and therefore regards his own class only as one element in a better possible church. The clear and comprehensive grasp with which he marshals his facts, is even less admirable than the impartiality, nay, more than that, the general kindness with which he reflects upon them."—*Examiner*.

"The writer of this volume has all the calmness belonging to one who feels himself not mixed up with the struggle he describes. There is about it a tone of great moderation and candour; and we cannot but feel confident that we have here, at least, the product of a thoroughly honest mind."—*Lowe's Edinburgh Magazine*.

**The Elements of Individualism.**

By WILLIAM MACCALL. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

"It is a book worthy of perusal. Even those who can find no sympathy with its philosophy, will derive pleasure and improvement from the many exquisite touches of feeling, and the many pictures of beauty which mark its pages.

"The expansive philosophy, the penetrative intellect, and the general humanity of the author, have rendered

*The Elements of Individualism* a book of strong and general interest."—*Critic*.

"We have been singularly interested by this book. . . . Here is a speaker and thinker whom we may securely feel to be a lover of truth, exhibiting in his work a form and temper of mind very rare and peculiar in our time."—*Manchester Examiner*.

**A Discourse of Matters pertaining to Religion.**

By THEODORE PARKER. Post 8vo. 7s. cloth.

## CONTENTS:

Book 1.—Of Religion in General; or, a Discourse of the Sentiment and its Manifestations.

Book 2.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to God; or, a Discourse of Inspiration.

Book 3.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to Jesus of Nazareth; or, a Discourse of Christianity.

"Mr. Parker is a very original writer. We recommend the work to our readers as one of a very remarkable kind, which cannot fairly be judged of by detached extracts."—*Edinburgh Review*, October, 1847.

"Parker writes like a Hebrew prophet, enriched by the ripest culture of the modern world.....His loftiest theories come thundering down into life with a rapidity and directness of aim which, while they alarm the timid and amaze the insincere, afford proof that he is less eager to be a reformer of men's thinking, than a thinker for their reformation. Whatever judgment the reader may pronounce on the philosophy of the volume, he will close it, we venture to affirm, with the consciousness that he leaves the presence of a truly great mind; of one who is not only unoppressed by his large store of learning, but seems absolutely to require a massive weight of knowledge to resist and regulate the native force of his thought, and occupy the grasp of his imagination."—*Westminster and Foreign Quarterly Review*, 1847.

"There is a mastery shown over every element of the Great Subject, and the slight treatment of it in parts no reader can help attributing to the plan of the work, rather than to the incapacity of the author. From the resources of a mind singularly exuberant by nature and laboriously enriched by culture, a system of results is here thrown up, and spread out in luminous exposition."—*Prospective Review*.

"Mr. Parker is no ephemeral teacher. ....His aspirations for the future

Book 4.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to the Greatest of Books; or, a Discourse of the Bible.

Book 5.—The Relation of the Religious Sentiment to the Greatest of Human Institutions; or, a Discourse of the Church.

are not less glowing than his estimate for the past. He revels in warm anticipations of the orient splendours, of which all past systems are but the precursors. .... His language is neither narrow nor unattractive; there is a consistency and boldness about it which will strike upon chords which, when they do vibrate, will make the ears more than tingle. We are living in an age which deals in broad and exhaustive theories; which requires a system that will account for everything, and assigns to every fact a place, and that no forced one, in the vast economy of things. Whatever defects Mr. Parker's view may have, it meets these requisites. It is large enough, and promising enough; it is not afraid of history. It puts forth claims; it is an articulately speaking voice. It deals neither in compromise nor abatement. It demands a hearing; it speaks with authority. It has a complete and determined aspect. It is deficient neither in candour nor promises; and whatever comes forward in this way will certainly find hearers."—*Christian Remembrancer*.

"It is impossible for any one to read the writings of Theodore Parker without being strongly impressed by them. They abound in passages of fervid eloquence—eloquence as remarkable for the truth of feeling which directs it, as for the genius by which it is inspired. They are distinguished by philosophical thought and learned investigation, no less than by the sensibility to beauty and goodness which they manifest."—*Christian Reformer*.

**The Life of Michael Servetus.**

By W. H. DRUMMOND, D.D. 12mo. cloth 3s. 6d

**Historical Sketches of the Old Painters.**

By the Author of the "Log Cabin." 2s. 6d. paper cover; 3s. cloth.

**Channing's Works, Complete. (Hedderwick's Edition.)**

6 vols. post 8vo. reduced to £1. 1s. cloth. (Uniform with the Memoirs.)

**Ireland, and her Famine.**

A Discourse. By JAMES MARTINEAU. 12mo. 6d.

**The Bible and the Child.**

A Discourse on Religious Education. By JAMES MARTINEAU. 12mo. 6d.

**Hymns for the Christian Church and Home.**

Edited by JAMES MARTINEAU. Sixth Edition, 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

**The Education of Taste.**

A Series of Lectures. By WILLIAM MACCALL. 12mo. 2s. 6d.

**The Agents of Civilization.**

A Series of Lectures. By WILLIAM MACCALL. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

**Lectures to Young Men.**

On the Cultivation of the Mind, the Formation of Character, and the Conduct of Life. By GEORGE W. BURNAP. Royal 8vo. 9d.

"This, we can foresee, is destined to become a household book, and it is a long time since we met with any work better deserving of such distinction. We do not know of any work on the same subject of equal excellence, and those of our readers who are wise will buy and study it."—*The Apprentice*.

**Lectures on the Memory of the Just ;**

Being a Series of Discourses in the Lives and Times of the Ministers of Mill Hill Chapel, Leeds. By Rev. C. WICKSTEAD. Second Edition, 8vo. cloth, 3s. 6d.

**An Inquiry concerning the Origin of Christianity.**

By CHARLES C. HENNEL. Second Edition, 8vo. 12s. cloth.

**Christian Theism.**

By the Author of "An Inquiry concerning the Origin of Christianity." 8vo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

**The Life of the Rev. Joseph Blanco White.**

Written by Himself. With Portions of his Correspondence. Edited by JOHN HAMILTON THOM. 3 vols. post 8vo. £1 4s. cloth.

"This is a book which rivets the attention, and makes the heart bleed. It has, indeed, with regard to himself, in its substance, though not in its arrangement, an almost dramatic character; so clearly and strongly is the living, thinking, active man projected from the face of the records which he has left.

"His spirit was a battle-field, upon which, with fluctuating fortune and singular intensity, the powers of belief and scepticism waged, from first to last, their unceasing war; and within the compass of his experience are presented to our view most of the great moral and spiritual problems that attach to the condition of our race."—*Quarterly Rev.*

"This book will improve his (Blanco White's) reputation. There is much in

the peculiar construction of his mind, in its close union of the moral with the intellectual faculties, and in its restless desire for truth, which may remind the reader of Doctor Arnold."—*Examiner*.

"There is a depth and force in this book which tells."—*Christian Remembrancer*.

"These volumes have an interest beyond the character of Blanco White. And beside the intrinsic interest of his self-portraiture, whose character is indicated in some of our extracts, the correspondence, in the letters of Lord Holland, Southey, Coleridge, Channing, Norton, Mill, Professor Powell, Dr. Hawkins, and other names of celebrity, has considerable attractions in itself, without any relation to the biographical purpose with which it was published."—*Spectator*.

**Luther Revived.**

Or, a Short Account of Johannes Ronge, the Bold Reformer of the Catholic Church in Germany. By A. ANDRESEN. 8vo. 1s.

**Scenes and Characters, illustrating Christian Truth.**

Edited by the Rev. H. WARE. 2 vols. 18mo. cloth. Reduced to 5s.

**Memoirs of the Life of the Rev. Lant Carpenter, L.L.D. ;**

With Selections from his Correspondence. Edited by his Son, RUSSELL LANT CARPENTER, B. A. With a portrait. 8vo. 12s. cloth.

**The Log Cabin ; or the World before you.**

By the Author of "Three Experiments of Living," "Sketches of the Old Painters." &c. 1s. 6d. paper cover ; 2s. cloth ; 2s. 6d. extra cloth, gilt edges.

**Stories for Sunday Afternoons.**

From the Creation to the Advent of the Messiah. For the use of Children from 5 to 11 years of age. By MRS. GEORGE DAWSON, (late Miss SUSAN FANNY CROMPTON.) 16mo, 1s. 6d. cloth.

"This is a very pleasing little volume, which we can confidently recommend. It is designed and admirably adapted for the use of children from five to eleven years of age. It purposes to infuse into that tender age some acquaintance with the facts, and taste for the study of the Old Testament. The style is simple, easy, and for the

most part correct. The stories are told in a spirited and graphic manner.

"Those who are engaged in teaching the young, and in laying the foundation of good character by early religious and moral impressions, will be thankful for additional resources of a kind so judicious as this volume."—*Inquirer*.

**Matins and Vespers ;**

With Hymns, and Occasional Devotional Pieces. By JOHN BOWRING. Third Edition, 18mo. cloth, reduced to 2s. 6d.

"This book is a little gem in its way. Of the beautiful devotional poetry it contains we need not speak ; it is familiar to the lips and to the hearts of multitudes. There is a peculiar sweet-

ness and charm in many of the pieces which compose the volume that must lead a person who has once looked into it to wish again and again to recur to it."—*Christian Examiner*.

**Sketches of Married Life.**

By MRS. FOLLEN. Royal 8vo. 1s. 4d.

**The Complete Works of the Rev. Orville Dewey, D.D.**

8vo. 7s. 6d. cloth.

**The Autobiography and Justification of J. Ronge.**

Translated from the German, Fifth Edition, by J. LORD, A.M. Fcp. 8vo. 1s.

"A plain, straightforward, and manly statement of facts connected with the

career of this remarkable man."—*Westminster Review*.

**Christianity : the Deliverance of the Soul, and its Life.**

By WILLIAM MOUNTFORD, M.A. Fcp 8vo, cloth ; 2s.

**Martyria : a Legend.**

Wherein are contained Homilies, Conversations, and Incidents of the Reign of Edward the Sixth. Written by WILLIAM MOUNTFORD, Clerk. Fcp. 8vo. cloth ; 6s.

**The Sick Chamber : a Manual for Nurses.**

18mo. 1s. cloth.

"A small but sensible and useful treatise, which might be fittingly entitled the Sick Room Manual. It is a brief outline of the necessary cares

and precautions which the chamber of an invalid requires, but which even quick-sighted affection does not always divine."—*Atlas*.

**What is Religion ? The Question Answered.**

By HENRY COLMAN. Fcp 8vo ; 1s. 6d. cloth.

**Livermore's Commentary on the Four Gospels.**

8vo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

## Two Orations against taking away Human Life, under any

Circumstances; and in explanation and defence of the misrepresented doctrine of Non-resistance. By THOMAS COOPER, Author of "The Purgatory of Suicides." Post 8vo. 1s. in paper cover.

"Mr. Cooper possesses undeniable abilities of no mean order, and moral courage beyond many..... The manliness with which he avows, and the boldness and zeal with which he urges, the doctrines of peace and love, respect for human rights, and moral power, in these lectures, are worthy of all honour."—*Nonconformist*.

"Mr. Cooper's style is intensely clear and forcible, and displays great earnestness and fine human sympathy;

it is in the highest degree manly, plain, and vigorous."—*Morning Advertiser*.

"These two orations are thoroughly imbued with the peace doctrines which have lately been making rapid progress in many unexpected quarters. To all who take an interest in that great movement, we would recommend this book, on account of the fervid eloquence and earnest truthfulness which pervades every line of it."—*Manchester Examiner*.

## The Truth Seeker in Literature, Philosophy, and Religion.

Devoted to free and Catholic enquiry, and to the Transcendental and Spiritual Philosophy of the Age. New Series, Published Quarterly, Price 2s.

## The Prospective Review.

A Quarterly Journal of Theology and Literature.

*Respite, Aspic, PROSPICE.*—*St. Bernard*.

"THE PROSPECTIVE REVIEW is devoted to a free THEOLOGY, and the moral aspects of LITERATURE. Under the conviction that lingering influences from the doctrine of verbal inspiration are not only depriving the primitive records of the Gospel of their true interpretation, but even destroying faith in Christianity itself, the Work is conducted in the confidence that only a living mind and heart, not in bondage to any letter, can receive the living *spirit* of Revelation; and in the fervent belief that for all such *there is* a true Gospel of God, which no critical or historical speculation can discredit or destroy. It aims to interpret and represent Spiritual Christianity, in its character of the Universal Religion. Fully adopting the sentiment of Coleridge, that 'the exercise of the reasoning and reflective powers, increasing insight, and enlarging views, are requisite to keep alive the substantial faith of the heart.'—with a grateful appreciation of the labours of faithful predecessors of all Churches,—it esteems it the part of a true reverence not to rest in their conclusions, but to think and live in their spirit. By the name 'PROSPECTIVE REVIEW,' it is intended to lay no claim to Discovery, but simply to express the *desire* and the *attitude* of Progress; to suggest continually the Duty of using Past and Present as a trust for the Future; and openly to disown the idolatrous Conservatism, of whatever sect, which makes Christianity but a lifeless formula."—*Extract from the Prospectus*.

No. XVII. was published on the 1st of February, 1849. Price 2s. 6d.

Works for Review to be sent to the Publisher or Editors; Advertisements in all cases to the Publisher.

## The Evidences of the Genuineness of the Gospels.

By ANDREWS NORTON, Professor of Sacred Literature, Harvard University, Massachusetts. 2 vols. 8vo. £1 cloth.

\*\*\* There are about fifty pages of new matter in the first volume, and this edition of the work embodies throughout various alterations and corrections made by the author at the present time.

THE Work consists of three Parts, as follows:—

### PART I.

PROOF THAT THE GOSPELS REMAIN ESSENTIALLY THE SAME AS THEY WERE ORIGINALLY COMPOSED

### PART II.

HISTORICAL EVIDENCE THAT THE GOSPELS HAVE BEEN ASCRIBED TO THEIR TRUE AUTHORS.

### PART III.

ON THE EVIDENCES FOR THE GENUINENESS OF THE GOSPELS AFFORDED BY THE EARLY HERETICS.

The very copious Notes appended to each volume constitute about half the amount of the entire work, the principal subjects of which are as follows :—

### CONTENTS OF THE NOTES.

**NOTE I.**—Further remarks on the present state of the Text of the Gospels.

**NOTE II.**—Various readings of the copies of the gospels extant in the time of Origen, which are particularly noticed by him.

**NOTE III.**—Undisputed Interpolations in Manuscripts of the Gospels.

**NOTE IV.**—On the Origin of the Correspondences among the first three Gospels.

**NOTE V.**—Justin Martyr's Quotations.

**NOTE VI.**—On the Writings ascribed to Apostolical Fathers.

**NOTE VII.**—On the Statue which is said by Justin Martyr, and others, to have been erected at Rome to Simon Magus.

**NOTE VIII.**—On the Clementine Homilies.

**NOTE IX.**—On the false Charges brought against the Hereticks, particularly by the later Fathers.

**NOTE X.**—On the Jewish Dispensation, Pentateuch, and the other books of the Old Testament.

**NOTE XI.**—On the Distinction made by the Ancients between Things Intelligible and Things Sensible; on the use of the Terms Spiritual and Material, as applied to their Speculations; and on the nature of Matter.

**NOTE XII.**—On Basilides and the Basilidians.

**NOTE XIII.**—On the Gospel of Marcion.

**NOTE XIV.**—On the use of words ΘΕΟΣ and DEUS.

### NOTICES OF THE WORK.

"Professor Norton has devoted a whole volume full of ingenious reasoning and solid learning, to show that the Gnostic sects of the second century admitted in general the same sacred books with the orthodox Christians. However doubtful may be his complete success, he has made out a strong case, which, as far as it goes, is one of the most valuable confutations of the extreme German *Υπερ-Κριτισ*, an excellent subsidiary contribution to the proof of the 'genuineness of the Scriptures.'\*\*\* His work on the Genuineness of the Scriptures is of a high intellectual order."—*Quarterly Review*, March, 1846.

"This (the 2nd and 3rd volumes) is a great work upon the philosophy of the early history of our faith, and upon the relations of that faith with the religious systems and the speculative opinions which then formed the belief or engaged the attention of the whole civilized world. The subject is one of vast compass and great importance; and fortunately it has been examined with much thoroughness, caution, and independence. The conclusions arrived at are those of one who thinks for himself, —not created by early prepossessions, nor restricted within the narrow limits of opinions peculiar to any school or sect. The originality and good sense of Mr. Norton's general remarks impress the reader quite as strongly as the accuracy of his scholarship, and the wide range of learning with which the subject is illustrated. His mind is neither cumbered nor confused by the rich store of its acquisitions, but works with the greatest clearness and effect when en-

gaged in the most discursive and far-reaching investigations. Nearly the whole of the work, as the German would say, belongs to the history of 'pure reason.' The originality of Mr. Norton's views is one of their most striking characteristics. He does not deem it necessary, as too many theologians have done, to defend the records of his faith by stratagem. The consequence is, that his work is one of the most unanswerable books that ever was written. It comes as near to demonstration as the nature of moral reasoning will admit.

"As an almost unrivalled monument of patience and industry, of ripe scholarship, thorough research, eminent ability, and conscientious devotion to the cause of truth, the work may well claim respectful consideration. The reasoning is eminently clear, simple, and direct; and abounds with the results of the most profound learning."—*North American Review*.

"The first volume of this work was published so long ago as the year 1837. At the close of it the author announces his intention to pursue the argument, by inquiring into the evidence to be derived from the testimony of the different heretical Sects. It is to this part of the subject that the second and third volumes, now before us, are directed,—which are evidently the fruit of much labour, research, and extensive reading; and contain a variety of very curious incidental matter, highly interesting to the student of ecclesiastical history, and of the human mind."—*Prospective Review*.

## The Catholic Series.\*

---

THE Publisher of "The Catholic Series" intends it to consist of Works of a liberal and comprehensive character, judiciously selected, embracing various departments of literature.

An attempt has been made by the Church of Rome to realize the idea of Catholicism—at least in *form*—and with but a partial success; an attempt will now be made to restore the word *Catholic* to its primitive significance, in its application to this Series, and to realize the idea of Catholicism in SPIRIT.

It cannot be hoped that each volume of the Series will be essentially Catholic, and not *partial*, in its nature, for nearly all men are partial;—the many-sided and *impartial*, or truly Catholic man, has ever been the rare exception to his race. Catholicity may be expected in the *Series*, not in every volume composing it.

An endeavour will be made to present to the Public a class of books of an interesting and thoughtful nature, and the authors of those of the Series which may be of a philosophical character will probably possess little in common, except a love of intellectual freedom and a faith in human progress; they will be united rather by sympathy of SPIRIT than by agreement in speculation.

\* For List of Works already published in the series, see pages 17 to 24.



## CHARACTERIZATION OF THE CATHOLIC SERIES

BY THE PRESS.

"The various works composing the "Catholic Series," should be known to all lovers of literature, and may be recommended as calculated to instruct and elevate by the proposition of noble aims and the inculcation of noble truths, furnishing reflective and cultivated minds with more wholesome food than the nauseous trash which the popular tale-writers of the day set before their readers."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"Too much encouragement cannot be given to enterprising publications like the present. They are directly in the teeth of popular prejudice and popular trash. They are addressed to the higher class of readers—those who think as well as read. They are works at which ordinary publishers shudder as 'unsaleable,' but which are really capable of finding a very large public."—*Foreign Quarterly*.

"The works already published embrace a great variety of subjects, and display a great variety of talent. They are not exclusively nor even chiefly religious; and they are from the pens of German, French, American, as well as English authors. Without reference to the opinion which they contain, we may safely say that they are generally such as all men of free and philosophical minds would do well to know and ponder."—*Nonconformist*.

"This series deserves attention, both for what it has already given, and for what it promises."—*Tait's Magazine*.

"A series not intended to represent or maintain a form of opinion, but to bring together some of the works which do honour to our common nature, by the genius they display, or by their ennobling tendency and lofty aspirations."—*Inquirer*.

"It is highly creditable to Mr. Chapman to find his name in connexion with so much well-directed enterprise in the cause of German literature and philosophy. He is the first publisher who seems to have proposed to himself the worthy object of introducing the English reader to the philosophic mind of Germany, uninfluenced by the tradesman's distrust of the marketable nature of the article. It is a very praiseworthy ambition; and we trust the public will justify his confidence. Nothing could be more unworthy than the attempt to discourage, and indeed punish, such unselfish enterprise, by attaching a bad reputation for orthodoxy to every thing connected with German philosophy and theology. This is especially unworthy in the 'student,' or the 'scholar,' to borrow Fichte's names, who should disdain to set themselves the task of exciting, by their friction, a popular prejudice and clamour on matters on which the populace are no competent judges, and have, indeed, no judgment of their own,—and who should feel, as men themselves devoted to thought, that what makes a good book is not that it should gain its reader's acquiescence, but that it should multiply his mental experience; that it should acquaint him with the ideas which philosophers and scholars, reared by a training different from their own, have laboriously reached and devoutly entertain; that, in a word, it should enlarge his materials and his sympathies as a man and a thinker."—*Prospective Review*.

"A series of serious and manly publications."—*Economist*.

## The Catholic Series.

### Memoir of Johann Gottlieb Fichte.

By WILLIAM SMITH. Second edition, enlarged. Post 8vo, cloth, 4s. 6d

".....A life of Fichte, full of nobleness and instruction, of grand purpose, tender feeling, and brave effort; ..... the compilation of which is executed with great judgment and fidelity."—*Prospective Review*.

"The material trials that Fichte encountered in the body are lost sight of in the spiritual contest which he maintained with his own mind. The page that keeps the record of incidents is dignified throughout by the strong moral light that falls everywhere upon it, like a glory, and sweetened by a living episode that flows through its dark and bright places like a stream of music."—*Athenæum*.

"We state Fichte's character as it is known and admitted by men of all parties among the Germans, when we say that so robust an intellect, a soul so calm, so lofty, massive, and immovable, has not mingled in philosophical discussion since the time of Luther... Fichte's opinions may be true or false; but his character as a thinker can be slightly valued only by such as know it ill; and as a man, approved by action and suffering, in his life and in his death, he ranks with a class of men who were common only in better ages than ours."—*State of German Literature*, by Thomas Carlyle.

### The Vocation of the Scholar.

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, by William Smith. Post 8vo, cloth, 2s.; paper cover, 1s. 6d.

"The Vocation of the Scholar.... is distinguished by the same high moral tone, and manly, vigorous expression which characterize all Fichte's works in the German, and is nothing lost in Mr. Smith's clear, unembarrassed, and thoroughly English translation."—*Douglas Jerrold's Newspaper*.

"We are glad to see this excellent translation of one of the best of

Fichte's works presented to the public in a very neat form.... No class needs an earnest and sincere spirit more than the literary class; and, therefore the 'Vocation of the Scholar,' the 'Guide of the Human Race,' written in Fichte's most earnest, most commanding temper, will be welcomed in its English dress by public writers, and be beneficial to the cause of truth."—*Economist*.

### On the Nature of the Scholar, and its Manifestations.

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German by WILLIAM SMITH. Second Edition. Post 8vo, cloth, 3s. 6d.

"With great satisfaction we welcome this first English translation of an author who occupies the most exalted position as a profound and original thinker; as an irresistible orator in the cause of what he believed to be truth; as a thoroughly honest and heroic man. .... The appearance of any of his works in our language is, we believe, a perfect novelty. .... These orations are admirably fitted for their purpose; so grand is the position taken by the lecturer, and so irresistible their eloquence."—*Examiner*.

"A pure and exalted morality and deep religious feeling breathes through

out the whole."—*Irish Monthly Magazine*.

"This work must inevitably arrest the attention of the scientific physician, by the grand spirituality of its doctrines, and the pure morality it teaches. .... Shall we be presumptuous if we recommend these views to our professional brethren? or if we say to the enlightened, the thoughtful, the serious, This—if you be true Scholars—is your Vocation? We know not a higher morality than this, or more noble principles than these: they are full of truth."—*British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*.

### The Vocation of Man.

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, by WILLIAM SMITH. Post 8vo, cloth, 4s. 6d.

"In the progress of my present work, I have taken a deeper glance into religion than ever I did before. In me

the emotions of the heart proceed only from perfect intellectual clearness;—it cannot be but that the clearness I have

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

now attained on this subject shall also take possession of my heart."—*Fichte's Correspondence*.

"THE VOCATION OF MAN' is, as Fichte truly says, intelligible to all readers who are really able to understand a book at all; and as the history of the mind in its various phases of doubt, knowledge, and faith, it is of interest to all. A book of this stamp is sure to teach you much, because it excites thought. If it rouses you to combat his conclusions, it has done a good

work; for in that very effort you are stirred to a consideration of points which have hitherto escaped your indolent acquiescence."—*Foreign Quarterly*.

"This is Fichte's most popular work, and is every way remarkable."—*Atlas*.

"It appears to us the boldest and most emphatic attempt that has yet been made to explain to man his restless and unconquerable desire to win the True and the Eternal."—*Sentinel*.

**The Characteristics of the Present Age.**

By JOHANN GOTTLIEB FICHTE. Translated from the German, by William Smith. Post 8vo. cloth, 7s.

"A noble and most notable acquisition to the literature of England."—*Douglas Jerrold's Weekly Paper*.

"We accept these lectures as a true and most admirable delineation of the present age; and on this ground alone we should bestow on them our heartiest recommendation; but it is because they teach us how we may rise above the age that we bestow on them our most emphatic praise.

"He makes us think, and perhaps more sublimely than we have ever formerly thought, but it is only in order that we may the more nobly act.

"As a majestic and most stirring utterance from the lips of the greatest German prophet, we trust that the book will find a response in many an English soul, and potently help to regenerate English Society."—*The Critic*.

**The Popular Works of Johann Gottlieb Fichte.**

Post 8vo, cloth, 12s. per volume.

Contents of Vol. I.:—1. MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR, by WILLIAM SMITH.  
2. THE VOCATION OF THE SCHOLAR. 3. THE NATURE OF THE SCHOLAR.  
4. THE VOCATION OF MAN.

Contents of Vol. II.:—1. THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE PRESENT AGE.  
2. THE WAY TOWARDS THE BLESSED LIFE; OR, THE DOCTRINE OF RELIGION.

**The Way towards the Blessed Life; or, The Doctrine of Religion.**

Translated by WILLIAM SMITH. Post 8vo, cloth.

**Characteristics of Men of Genius;**

A Series of Biographical, Historical, and Critical Essays, selected by permission, chiefly from the North American Review, with Preface, by JOHN CHAPMAN. 2 vols. post 8vo. cloth, 12s.; extra cloth, gilt edges, 14s.

## CONTENTS.

GREGORY VII., LOYOLA, PASCAL.  
DANTE, PETRARCH, SHELLEY, BYRON, GOETHE, WORDSWORTH,  
MILTON, SCOTT, THE GERMAN POETS.  
MICHAEL ANGELO, CANOVA.  
MACHIAVELLI, LOUIS IX., PETER THE GREAT.

"Essays of very high order, which from their novelty, and their intrinsic value, we are sure will receive from the British public a reception commensurate with their merits.....They are Essays which would do honour to the

literature of any country."—*Westminster Review*.

"Essays of great power and interest. ....In freedom of opinion, and occasionally in catholicity of judgment, the writers are superior to our own periodical

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—continued.

cal essayists; but we think there is less brilliancy and point in them; though on that very account there is, perhaps, greater impartiality and justice."—*Douglas Jerrold's Magazine*.

"Rich as we are in this delightful department of Literature, we gladly accept another contribution to critical biography. . . . The American writers keep more closely to their text than our own reviewers, and are less solicitous to construct a theory of their own, and thereby run the risk of discolouring the facts of history, than to take a calm and dispassionate survey of events and opinions."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"Essays well worthy of an European Life."—*Christian Reformer*.

"The collection before us is able and readable, with a good deal of interest in its subjects. They exhibit force, justness of remark, an acquaintance with their subject, beyond the mere book reviewed; much clear-headed pains-taking in the paper itself, where the

treatment requires pains, a larger and more liberal spirit than is often found in Transatlantic literature, and sometimes a marked and forcible style."—*Spectator*.

"A work that will be right welcome to all lovers of literature, and which ought to be ordered by every book-club."—*Critic*.

"There is hardly one of these papers that has not great merit."—*Inquirer*.

"This is truly a delightful book. We heartily welcome it as worthy to take its stand by the side of the 'Contributions' of our own great reviewers. Each essay, having for its object the development of the characteristics of one mind, is complete in itself, and almost perfect in the elegance and beauty of its execution."—*Nonconformist*.

"The value, both intrinsic and extrinsic, of these essays justly claims for them a favourable reception and attentive perusal in England."—*Manchester Examiner*.

## The Worship of Genius ;

Being an Examination of the Doctrine announced by D. F. Strauss, viz. "That to our Age of Religious Disorganization nothing is left but a Worship of Genius; that is, a Reverence for those great Spirits who create Epochs in the Progress of the Human Race, and in whom, taken collectively, the God-like manifests itself to us most fully," and thus having reference to the views unfolded in the work entitled, "*Heroes and Hero-worship*," by Thomas Carlyle.

AND

## The Distinctive Character or Essence of Christianity :

An Essay relative to Modern Speculations and the present State of Opinion. Translated, from the German of Prof. C. Ullmann, by LUCY SANFORD. 1 vol. post 8vo. 3s. 6d.

### CONTENTS.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. General view of the object of the work.</li> <li>2. The different stages of development through which Christianity itself has passed. The same phases perceptible in the views which have been successively taken of it.</li> <li>3. Christianity as Doctrine. Under this head are comprised both Supernaturalism and Naturalism.</li> <li>4. Christianity as a Moral Law. The philosophy of Kant. Rationalism.</li> <li>5. Christianity as the Religion of Redemption. Schleiermacher's definition.</li> </ol> | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>6. The peculiar significance and influence of Christ's individual character.</li> <li>7. The views of Hegel and his school.</li> <li>8. Christ as the exemplification of the union of the Divine and Human in one character.</li> <li>9. Importance of this truth for the definition of the distinctive Character of Christianity.</li> <li>10. Christianity as the Perfect Religion.</li> <li>11. Inferences from the preceding.</li> <li>12. Retrospect and epitome of the argument.</li> <li>13. Application of the preceding to the idea of Faith.</li> <li>14. Application to the Church.</li> </ol> |
|---|--|

\* \* \* The above two works are comprised in one volume, post 8vo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

"There are many just and beautiful conceptions expressed and developed, and the mode of utterance and illustration is more clear and simple than that adopted often by our German brethren in treating such topics."—*Nonconformist*.

"There is in it much important and original thought. Intelligent British Christians, who are inclined to take philosophical views of the Christian faith, will find much to delight and instruct them."—*Baptist Magazine*.

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

**The Life of Jean Paul Fr. Richter.**

Compiled from various sources. Together with his Autobiography. Translated from the German. 2 vols. paper cover, 7s.; cloth, 8s.

"The autobiography of Richter, which extends only to his twelfth year, is one of the most interesting studies of a true poet's childhood ever given to the world."—*Lowe's Edinburgh Magazine*.

"Richter has an intellect vehement, rugged, irresistible, crushing in pieces the hardest problems; piercing into the most hidden combinations of things, and grasping the most distant; an imagination vague, sombre, splendid, or appalling, brooding over the abysses of being, wandering through infinitude, and summoning before us, in its dim religious light, shapes of brilliancy, solemnity, or terror; a fancy of exuberance literally unexampled, for it pours its treasures with a lavishness which knows no limit, hanging, like the sun, a jewel on every grass-blade, and sowing the earth at large with orient pearls. But deeper than all these lies humour, the ruling quality of RICHTER—as it were the central fire that pervades and vivifies his whole being. He is a humorist from his inmost soul; he thinks as a humorist; he imagines, acts, feels as a humorist: sport is the element in which his nature lives and works."—THOMAS CARLYLE.

"With such a writer it is no common treat to be intimately acquainted. In the proximity of great and virtuous minds we imbibe a portion of their nature—feel, as mesmerists say, a healthful contagion, are braced with the same spirit of faith, hope, and patient endurance—are furnished with data for clearing up and working out the intricate problem of life, and are inspired, like them, with the prospect of immortality. No reader of sensibility can rise from the perusal of these volumes without becoming both wiser and better."—*Atlas*.

"We find in the present biography much that does not so much amuse and instruct, as, to adopt a phrase from the religious world, positively edifies the reader. The life of Richter is indeed a moral and a religious, as much as a literary treat, to all who have a sense exercised to discern religion and morality as a thing essentially different from mere orthodoxy and asceticism. The two volumes before us cannot be seriously read without stimulating the reader, like a good sermon, to self-amelioration, and in this respect they are invaluable.

"Richter is a thorough Christian, and a Christian with a large glowing human

heart. The appearance of his biography in an English form cannot, therefore, but be regarded as a great boon to the best interests of the country."—*Tait's Magazine*.

"Apart from the interest of the work, as the life of Jean Paul, the reader learns something of German life and German thought, and is introduced to Weimar during its most distinguished period—when Goethe, Schiller, Herder, and Wieland, the great fixed stars of Germany, in conjunction with Jean Paul, were there, surrounded by beautiful and admiring women, of the most refined and exalted natures, and of princely rank. It is full of passages so attractive and valuable that it is difficult to make a selection as examples of its character."—*Inquirer*.

"This book will be found very valuable as an introduction to the study of one of the most eccentric and difficult writers of Germany. Jean Paul's writings are so much the reflex of Jean Paul himself, that every light that shines upon the one inevitably illumines the other. The work is a useful exhibition of a great and amiable man, who, possessed of the kindest feelings, and the most brilliant fantasy, turned to a high purpose that humour of which Rabelais is the great grandfather, and Sterne one of the line of ancestors, and contrasted it with an exaltation of feeling and a rhapsodical poetry which are entirely his own. Let us hope that it will complete the work begun by Mr. Carlyle's Essays, and cause Jean Paul to be really read in this country."—*Examiner*.

"Richter is exhibited in a most amiable light in this biography—industrious, frugal, benevolent, with a child-like simplicity of character, and a heart overflowing with the purest love. His letters to his wife are beautiful memorials of true affection, and the way in which he perpetually speaks of his children shows that he was the most attached and indulgent of fathers. Whoever came within the sphere of his companionship appears to have contracted an affection for him that death only dissolved: and while his name was resounding through Germany, he remained as meek and humble as if he had still been an unknown adventurer on Parnassus."—*The Apprentice*.

"The life of Jean Paul is a charming piece of biography which draws and rivets the attention. The affections of the reader are fixed on the hero with an intensity rarely bestowed on an his-

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

torical character. It is impossible to read this biography without a conviction of its integrity and truth; and though Ritcher's style is more difficult of translation than that of any other

German, yet we feel that his golden thoughts have reached us pure from the mine, to which he has given that impress of genius which makes them current in all countries."—*Christian Reformer*.

**The Mental History of an Inquiring Spirit.**

A Biography of Charles Elwood. By O. A. BROWNSON. Post 8vo. 4s. cloth; 3s. 6d. paper cover.

"This work is an attempt to present Christianity so that it shall satisfy the philosophic element of our nature. In this consists its peculiar merit and its distinctive characteristic. Such a book was certainly very much needed. We have no doubt that it will add many a doubter to a cheerful faith, and confirm many a feeble mind in the faith it has already professed. Mr. Brownson addresses the philosophic element, and the men in whom this element is predominant; and, of course, he presents the arguments that would be the most striking and satisfactory to this class of men. In so far as he has succeeded, he must be considered to have done a meritorious work. We think Mr. Brownson eminently qualified for this task, and that his success is complete. The work will, doubtless, be the means of giving composure and serenity to the faith of many who are as yet weak in the faith, or halting between two opinions."—*Christian Examiner*.

"In a series of chapters, Mr. Morton explains the nature of the Christian faith, and replies to the objections raised by Elwood as the discussion proceeds, and the argument we take to be conclusive, though of course every one may differ as to details. The mighty theme is handled in a most masterly style, and the reasoning may fairly be called 'mathematical.' There is neither rant nor cant, hypothesis or dogmatism. Christianity is proved to be a 'rational religious system,' and the priest is exhibited in his true character.

We can cordially recommend the volume, after a very careful perusal, to the layman who desires to think for himself, and to the clergy, as eminently calculated to enlarge their views and increase their usefulness, by showing them the difference between sectarianism and Christianity."—*Sentinel*.

"The purposes, in this stage of his progress, which Mr. Brownson has in view are, the vindication of the reality of the religious principle in the nature of man; the existence of an order of sentiments higher than the calculations of the understanding and the deductions of logic; the foundation of morals on the absolute idea of right in opposition to the popular doctrine of expediency; the exposition of a spiritual philosophy; and the connexion of Christianity with the progress of society.

"The work presents the most profound ideas in a simple and attractive form. The discussion of these principles, which in their primitive abstraction are so repulsive to most minds, is carried on, through the medium of a slight fiction, with considerable dramatic effect. We become interested in the final opinions of the subjects of the tale, as we do in the catastrophe of a romance. A slender thread of narrative is made to sustain the most weighty arguments on the philosophy of religion; but the conduct both of the story and of the discussion is managed with so much skill, that they serve to relieve and forward each other."—*Dial*.

**The Mission of the German Catholics.**

By Prof. G. G. GERVINUS, Author of the "Geschichte der Poetischen National-Literatur der Deutschen." Post 8vo. 1s. 4d.

"The work well deserves an introduction to an English public. It contains the reflections of a German philosopher on the extraordinary religious movement which is now agitating his countrymen; his anticipations, and his wishes respecting its results."—*Inquirer*.

In an article upon the Author's "History of the Poetical Literature of the Germans," the *North American*

*Review* says:—"He exhibits the extensive and profound erudition, the historical faculty of bringing past and remote states of society near, and projecting the present into the distance; and the philosophical insight into the distinguishing features of individuals, communities, and epochs, which so favourably characterize the recent historiography of the Germans."

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

**The Philosophical and Aesthetic Letters and Essays of Schiller.**

Translated, with an Introduction, by J. WEISS. Post 8vo. 7s. 6d. cloth.

"These Letters stand unequalled in the department of Aesthetics, and are so esteemed even in Germany, which is so fruitful upon that topic. Schiller is Germany's best Aesthetician, and these letters contain the highest moments of Schiller. Whether we desire rigorous logical investigation or noble poetic expression, whether we wish to stimulate the intellect or inflame the heart, we need seek no further than these. They are trophies won from an unpopular, metaphysical form, by a lofty, inspiring, and absorbing subject."—*Introduction.*

"It is not possible, in a brief notice like the present, to do more than intimate the kind of excellence of a book of this nature. It is a profound and beautiful dissertation, and must be diligently studied to be comprehended. After all the innumerable efforts that the present age has been some time making to cut a Royal road to everything, it is beginning to find that what sometimes seems the longest way round is the shortest way home; and if there be a desire to have truth, the only way is to work at the windlass one's self, and bring up the buckets by the labour of one's own good arm. Whoever works at the present well, will find ample reward for the labour they may bestow on it; the truths he will draw up are universal, and from that pure elementary fountain 'that maketh wise he that drinketh thereat.'"—*Douglas Jerrold's Magazine.*

"It is difficult, if not impossible, to give a brief, and at the same time faithful, summary of the ideas affirmed by Schiller in this volume. Its aim is to develop the ideal of humanity, and to define the successive steps which must be trodden to attain it. Its spirit aspires after human improvement, and seeks to indicate the means of realization. Schiller insists upon the necessity of æsthetic culture as preliminary to moral culture, and in order to make the latter possible. According to the doctrine here set forth, until man is æsthetically developed, he cannot be

morally free, hence not responsible, as there is no sphere for the operation of the will.

"The style in which the whole volume is written is particularly beautiful, there is a consciousness of music in every page we read; it is remarkable for the condensation of thought and firm consistency which prevails throughout; and so far as we are able to judge, the translation is admirably and faithfully rendered. The twenty-seven letters upon the 'Æsthetic Culture of Man,' form the most prominent, and by far the most valuable, portion of the work; they will be found full of interest and the choicest riches, which will abundantly repay any amount of labour bestowed upon them."—*Inquirer.*

"This is a book which demands and deserves study. Either to translate or to appreciate it requires a somewhat peculiar turn of mind. Not that any body could read it without profit, but to gain from it all that it is capable of yielding, there must be some aptitude for such studies, and some training in them too. . . . To be appreciated it must be studied, and the study will be well repaid."—*Christian Examiner.*

"Here we must close, unwillingly, this volume, so abounding in food for thought, so fruitful of fine passages, heartily commending it to all of our readers who desire to make acquaintance with the philosophy of art. The extracts we have taken will prove what a treasure is here, for they are but a fraction of the gems that are to be gathered in every page. We make no apology for having so long lingered over this book; for, albeit, philosophy is somewhat out of fashion in our age of materialism, it yet will find its votaries, fit though few; and even they who care not for the higher regions of reflection, cannot fail to reap infinite pleasure from the eloquent and truthful passages we have sought to cull for their mingled delight and edification."—*Critic.*

**The Philosophy of Art.**

An Oration on the Relation of the Plastic Arts to Nature. Translated from the German of F. W. J. VON SCHELLING, by A. JOHNSON. Post 8vo. 1s. paper cover; 1s. 6d. cloth.

"This excellent oration is an application to art of Schelling's general philosophic principles. Schelling takes the bold course, and declares that what is ordinarily called nature is not the summit of perfection, but is only the

inadequate manifestation of a high idea, which it is the office of man to penetrate. The true astronomer is not he who notes down laws and causes which were never revealed to sensuous organs, and which are often opposed to

## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

the *prima facie* influences of sensuous observers. The true artist is not he who merely imitates an isolated object in nature, but he who can penetrate into the unseen essence that lurks behind the visible crust, and afterwards reproduce it in a visible form. In the surrounding world means and ends are clashed and jarred together; in the work of art the heterogeneous is excluded, and an unity is attained not to be found elsewhere. Schelling, in his oration, chiefly, not exclusively, regards the arts of painting and sculpture; but

his remarks will equally apply to others, such as poetry and music. This oration of Schelling's deserves an extensive perusal. The translation, with the exception of a few trifling inaccuracies, is admirably done by Mr. Johnson; and we know of no work in our language better suited to give a notion of the turn which German philosophy took after it abandoned the subjectivity of Kant and Fichte. The notion will, of course, be a faint one; but it is something to know the latitude and longitude of a mental position."—*Examiner*.

**Essays. By R. W. Emerson.**

(Second Series.) With a Notice by THOMAS CARLYLE. 3s. paper cover  
3s. 6d. cloth.

"Among the distinguishing features of Christianity—we are ready to say THE distinguishing feature—is its humanity, its deep sympathy with human kind, and its strong advocacy of human wants and rights. In this particular, few have a better title to be ranked among the followers of Jesus than the author of this book."—*American Christian Examiner*.

"The difficulty we find in giving a proper notice of this volume, arises from the pervadingness of its excellence, and the compression of its matter. With more learning than Hazlitt, more perspicuity than Carlyle, more vigour and depth of thought than Addison, and with as much originality and fascination as any of them, this volume is a brilliant addition to the Table Talk of intellectual men, be they who or where they may."—*Prospective Review*.

"Mr. Emerson is not a common man, and everything he writes contains suggestive matter of much thought and earnestness."—*Examiner*.

"That Emerson is, in a high degree, possessed of the faculty and vision of the *seer*, none can doubt who will earnestly and with a kind and reverential spirit peruse these nine Essays. He deals only with the true and the eternal. His piercing gaze at once shoots swiftly, surely through the outward and the superficial, to the inmost causes and workings. Any one can tell the time who looks on the face of the clock, but he loves to lay bare the machinery and show its moving principle. His words and his thoughts are a fresh spring,

that invigorates the soul that is steeped therein. His mind is ever dealing with the eternal; and those who only live to exercise their lower intellectual faculties, and desire only new facts and new images, and those who have not a feeling or an interest in the great question of mind and matter, eternity and nature, will disregard him as unintelligible and uninteresting, as they do Bacon and Plato, and, indeed, philosophy itself."—*Douglas Jerrold's Magazine*.

"Beyond social science, because beyond and outside social existence, there lies the science of self, the development of man in his individual existence, within himself and for himself. Of this latter science, which may perhaps be called the philosophy of individuality, Mr. Emerson is an able apostle and interpreter."—*League*.

"As regards the particular volume of EMERSON before us, we think it an improvement upon the first series of essays. The subjects are better chosen. They come more home to the experience of the mass of mankind, and are consequently more interesting. Their treatment also indicates an artistic improvement in the composition."—*Spectator*.

"All lovers of literature will read Mr. Emerson's new volume, as the most of them have read his former one; and if correct taste, and sober views of life, and such ideas on the higher subjects of thought as we have been accustomed to account as truths, are sometimes outraged, we at least meet at every step with originality, imagination, and eloquence."—*Inquirer*.

**The Rationale of Religious Inquiry;**

Or, the Question stated, of Reason, the Bible, and the Church. By JAMES MARTINEAU. Third Edition. With a Critical Letter on Rationalism, Miracles, and the Authority of Scripture, by the late Rev. JOSEPH BLANCO WHITE. 4s. paper cover; 4s. 6d. cloth.



## THE CATHOLIC SERIES—(continued.)

**The Roman Church and Modern Society.**

By E. QUINET, of the College of France. Translated from the French Third Edition (with the Author's approbation), by C. COCKS, B.L. 8vo. 5s. cloth.

"This enlightened volume . . . . ."  
*Christian Reformer.*

"Considered as a whole, the book before us is the most powerful and philosophically consistent protest against the Roman Church which has ever claimed our attention, and, as a strong confirmation of its stirring efficiency, we may mention that the excitement it has created in Paris has subjected the author to a reprimand from both Chambers of the Legislature, and excommunication by the Pope."—*Inquirer.*

"M. Quinet belongs to the movement

party, and has lately been conspicuous in resisting the pretensions of the Jesuit and French clergy to the exclusive education of the youth of France. He has grappled with his theme both practically, and in the philosophical spirit of history. . . . Rare merits are comprised in this volume . . . . . a genuine spirit pervades it, and there are many passages of great depth, originality and eloquence."—*Atlas.*

".... These eloquent and valuable lectures."—*New Church Advocate.*

**Sermons of Consolation.**

By F. W. P. GREENWOOD, D.D. 5s. cloth.

"This is a really delightful volume, which we would gladly see producing its purifying and elevating influences in all our families."—*Inquirer.*

"This beautiful volume we are sure

will meet with a grateful reception from all who seek instruction on the topics most interesting to a thoughtful mind. There are twenty-seven sermons in the volume."—*Christian Examiner.*

**Self-Culture.**

By WILLIAM ELLERY CHANNING. 6d. paper cover; 1s. cloth.

**Christianity, or Europe.**

Translated from the German of NOVALIS (Friedrich von Hardenberg), by the Rev. J. DALTON. 6d. paper cover.

**The Critical and Miscellaneous Writings of Theodore Parker.**

Post 8vo, cloth, 6s.

"It will be seen from these extracts that Theodore Parker is a writer of considerable power and freshness, if not originality. Of the school of Carlyle, or rathertaking the same German originals for his models, Parker has a more sober style and a less theatric taste. His composition wants the grotesque animation and richness of Carlyle, but it is vivid, strong, and frequently picturesque, with a tenderness that the great Scotchman does not possess."—*Spectator.*

"Viewing him as a most useful, as well as highly gifted man, we cordially welcome the appearance of an English reprint of some of his best productions. The 'Miscellaneous' Pieces are characterised by his peculiar eloquence, which is without a parallel in the works of

English writers. His language is almost entirely figurative; the glories of nature are pressed into his service, and convey his most careless thought. This is the principal charm of his writings; his eloquence is altogether unlike that of the English orator or essayist; it partakes of the grandeur of the forests in his native land; and we seem, when listening to his speech, to hear the music of the woods, the rustling of the pine-trees, and the ringing of the woodman's axe. In this respect he resembles Emerson; but, unlike that celebrated man, he never discourses audibly with himself, in a language unknown to the world—he is never obscure; the stream, though deep, reveals the glittering gems which cluster so thickly on its bed."—*Inquirer.*





This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly

BOOK DUE WID

BOOK DUE WID

FEB 7 1980

FEB 22 1980

6561171

BOOK DUE WID

JUL 22 1980

BOOK DUE WID

OCT 20 1979

RECEIVED  
CANCELLED

JAN 14 1993  
BOOK DUE



3 2044 018 637 397

